

11. 1. 60

11. 1. 60 21

O B S E R V A T I O N S

O N

C E R T A I N P A R T S

O F T H E

A N I M A L Œ C O N O M Y .

B Y J O H N H U N T E R .



L O N D O N ,

S O L D A T N ° 13, C A S T L E - S T R E E T , L E I C E S T E R - S Q U A R E .

M D C C L X X V I .

TO

SIR JOSEPH BANKS, BART.

PRESIDENT OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY,

&c. &c. &c.

DEAR SIR,

AS the following Observations were made in the Course of those Pursuits in which you have so warmly interested yourself, and promoted with the most friendly Assistance, I should be wanting in Gratitude, were I not to address them to you, as a public Testimony of the Friendship and Esteem with which I am,

DEAR SIR,

YOUR OBLIGED, AND

VERY HUMBLE SERVANT,

LEICESTER-SQUARE,
NOVEMBER, 9, 1786.

JOHN HUNTER.

THE

C O N T E N T S.

A DESCRIPTION of the situation of the testis in the foetus, with its
descent into the scrotum, page 1

OBSERVATIONS on the glands situated between the rectum and bladder,
called vesiculæ feminales, 27

AN account of the free martin, 45

AN account of an extraordinary pheasant, 63

AN account of the organ of hearing in fishes, 69

AN account of certain receptacles of air in birds, which communicate
with the lungs and Eustachian tube, 77

EXPERIMENTS and observations on animals, with respect to the power
of producing heat, 87

PROPOSALS for the recovery of persons apparently drowned, 115

ON

THE CONTENTS.

<u>ON the structure of the placenta,</u>	<u>page 127</u>
<u>Observations on the placenta of the monkey,</u>	<u>136</u>
<u>OBSERVATIONS on the Gillaroo trout, commonly called in Ireland the gizzard trout,</u>	<u>141</u>
<u>SOME observations on digestion,</u>	<u>147</u>
<u>ON a secretion in the crop of breeding pigeons, for the nourishment of their young,</u>	<u>191</u>
<u>ON the colour of the pigmentum of the eye in different animals,</u>	<u>199</u>
<u>The use of the oblique muscles,</u>	<u>209</u>
A description of the nerves which supply the organ of smelling,	213
A description of some branches of the fifth pair of nerves,	219

ERRATA.

- Page 14, line 2, for *invariable*, read *invariably*.
 28, 25, for *falling a*, read *falling from a*.
 63, 23, for *principle*, read *principal*.
 81, 15, for *the humeri*, read *the os humeri*.
 88, 1, for *freeze*, read *freeze*.
 101, 1, for *affect*, read *effect*.
 118, 19, for *principle*, read *principal*.
 120, last line, for *rouses and depresso*, read *rouse and depress*.
 187, line 13, for *swallows*, read *they swallow*.

A DESCRIPTION

A DESCRIPTION OF THE SITUATION OF THE TESTIS IN THE FOETUS, WITH ITS DESCENT INTO THE SCROTUM.

A Discovery in any art not only enriches that to which it immediately belongs, but elucidates all those to which it has any relation. A knowledge of the construction of the human body is essential to medicine, therefore every improvement in anatomy must throw new light on that branch of science; and these improvements are more striking when they are new; which is well illustrated by the advantages derived to pathology, from the discovery of the lymphatics being the absorbent system; and is no less evident in the hernia, where the intestine lies in contact with the testicle, which by the discovery of the original seat of the testicle is perfectly explained.

Several years before Haller's *Opuscula Pathologica* were published, my brother informed me, that in examining the contents of the abdomen of a child, still born, about the seventh or eighth month, he found both the testicles lying in that cavity, and mentioned the circumstance with some degree of surprise. We could never explain this matter to our satisfaction till the publication of the *Opuscula*, to which Dr. Hunter alludes, commentaries, page 72, in the following words.

"In the latter end of the year 1755, when I first had the pleasure of reading Baron Haller's observations on the *hernia congenita*," it struck my imagination that the state of the testis in the foetus and its descent from the abdomen into the scrotum would explain several things concerning ruptures and the hydrocele, and particularly that observation which Mr. Sharp had communicated to me, viz. that in ruptures the intestine is sometimes in contact with the testis. I communicated my ideas upon this subject to my brother, and desired that he would take every opportu-

^a Alberti Halleri *Opuscul. Patholog. Lausan. 1755, 8vo. page 53, &c.*

nity of learning exactly the state of the testis before and after birth, and the state of ruptures in children. We were both convinced that the examination of those facts would answer our expectation, and both recollected having seen appearances in children, that agreed with our supposition, but saw now that we had neglected making the proper use of them.

"In the course of the winter, my brother had several opportunities of dissecting fœtuses of different ages, and of making some drawings of the parts; and all his observations agreed with the ideas I had formed of the nature of ruptures, and of the origin of the tunica vaginalis propria in the fœtus. But till those observations were repeated to his satisfaction, and were sufficiently ascertained, he desired me not to mention the opinion in my lecture; and therefore, when treating of the coats of the testis, and of the situation of the hernial sac, &c. I only put in this temporary caution, that I was then speaking of those things as they are commonly in adult bodies, and not as they are in the fœtus: and at last, when I was concluding my lectures for that season in the end of April, 1756, with a course of the surgical operations, I gave a very general account of my brother's observations, and shewed both the drawing of Fig. II. which was then finished, and the subject from which it was made."

The following observations on this subject are taken from my notes, published by Dr. Hunter, in his commentaries, to which I have since added some practical remarks.

Until the approach of birth, the testes of the fœtus are lodged within the cavity of the abdomen, and may therefore be reckoned among the abdominal viscera.

They are situated immediately below the kidneys, on the forepart of the plovæ muscles, and by the side of the rectum, where this intestine is passing down into the cavity of the pelvis: for in the fœtus the rectum, which is much larger in proportion to the capacity of the pelvis, than in the full-grown subject, lies before the vertebræ lumborum as well as before the os sacrum. Indeed the case is pretty much the same with regard to all the contents of the pelvis; that is, their situation is much higher in the fœtus than in the adult; the sigmoid flexure of the colon, part of the rectum, the greatest part of the bladder, the fundus uteri, the fallopian tubes, &c.

&c. being placed in the fœtus above the hollow of the pelvis, in the common or great abdominal cavity.

At this time the shape or figure of the testis is much the same as in the adult, and its position or attitude is the same as when it is in the scrotum; that is, one end is placed upwards, the other downwards; one flat side is to the right, the other to the left; and one edge is turned backwards, the other forwards. But as the testis is less connected with the surrounding parts while it is in the loins, its position may be a little variable. The most natural seems to be when the anterior edge is turned directly forwards; but the least touch of any thing will throw that edge either to the right side, or to the left, and then the flat side of the testis is turned forwards.

It is attached to the psoas muscle all along its posterior edge, except just at its upper extremity. This attachment is formed by the peritonæum, which covers the testis and gives it a smooth surface, in the same manner as it envelopes the other loose abdominal viscera.

The epididymis lies along the outside of the posterior edge of the testis, as in older bodies, but is larger in proportion, and adheres backwards to the psoas. When the fœtus is very young, the adhesion of the testis and epididymis to the psoas is very narrow; and then the testis is more loose, and more projecting: but as the fœtus advances in months, the adhesion of the testis to the psoas becomes broader and tighter.

The vessels of the testis, like those of most parts of the body, commonly rise from the nearest larger trunks, viz. from the aorta and cava, or from the emulgents.

The artery generally rises from the forepart of the aorta, a little below the emulgent artery; and often from the emulgent itself, especially in the right side of the body; which may happen the rather, because the trunk of the aorta is more distant from the right testis than from the left. Sometimes, but much more rarely, the spermatic artery springs from the phrenic, or from that of the capsula renalis. Besides the artery which rises from the aorta, or emulgent, &c. the testis receives one from the hypogastric artery, which is sometimes as large as the other. It runs upwards from its origin, passing close to the vas deferens, in its way to the testis. The

superior spermatic artery sometimes passes before the lower end of the kidney. Both these arteries run in a serpentine direction, making pretty large but gentle turnings; both are situated behind the peritonæum, and both run into the posterior edge of the testis, between the two reflected laminæ of that membrane, much in the same manner as the vessels pass to the intestines between the two reflected laminæ of the mesocolon or mesentery.

The veins of the testis are analogous to its arteries. The superior spermatic vein, to begin with its trunk, rises commonly in the following manner; on the right side from the trunk of the cava a little below the emulgent, and on the left side from the left emulgent vein. The reason of this difference between the right and left spermatic vein, no doubt, is because the cava is not placed in the middle of the body; so that by the rule of ramification, which is observed in most parts of the body, the cava is the nearest large vein of the right side, and the emulgent is the nearest large vein of the left side. But the difference is inconsiderable; and accordingly we sometimes find the right spermatic vein coming from the right emulgent vein, and several other varieties, which, so far as I can observe, follow no precise rule. There is likewise a spermatic vein, which rises from the internal iliac, and runs up to the testis with the inferior spermatic artery. Both the spermatic veins run behind the peritonæum with their corresponding arteries, and go into the posterior edge of the testis, where they are lost in small branches.

The nerves of the testis, like its blood-vessels, come from the nearest source; that is, from the abdominal plexuses of the intercostal; especially the inferior mesenteric plexus. They run to the testis, attending upon its blood-vessels, and are dispersed with them through its substance. The testis therefore, with respect to its nerves, may be reckoned an abdominal viscus; and this observation will hold good, when applied to the full-grown subject, as well as to the fœtus; for those branches of the lumbar nerves, which are commonly said to be sent to the testis, passing through the tendon of the external oblique muscle, in reality go not to the testis itself, but to its exterior coverings, and to the scrotum.

The testicle receiving its nerves from the plexuses of the intercostal, accounts for the stomach and intestines sympathizing so readily with it
and

and its particular sensation, with the effects arising in the constitution upon its being injured.

The epididymis begins at the outer and posterior part of the upper end of the testis, immediately above the entrance of the blood-vessels. There it is thick, round, and united to the testis; as it passes down, it becomes a little smaller and more flat, and is only attached backwards to the testis, or rather indeed to its vessels, for it lies loose against the side of the testis forwards; and at its lower end it is again more firmly attached to the body of the testis; so that in the fœtus there is a cavity or pouch formed between the middle part of the testis, and the middle part of the epididymis, which is more considerable than what is commonly observed in full-grown subjects. As the body grows, the epididymis adheres more closely to the side of the testis. The greatest part of the epididymis is made up of one convoluted canal, which becomes larger in size and less convoluted towards the lower end of the epididymis, and at last is manifestly a single tube running a little serpentine. That change happens at the lower end of the testis, and there the canal takes the name of *vas deferens*.

This duct is a little convoluted or serpentine in its whole course, but is less so as it comes nearer to the bladder; instead of running upwards from the lower end of the testis, as it does at a more advanced period of life, in the fœtus at this age it runs downwards and inwards in its whole course; so that it goes on almost in the direction of the epididymis, of which it is a continuation. It turns inwards from the lower end of the epididymis, under the lower end of the testis, and behind the upper end of a ligament or gubernaculum testis, which I shall presently describe; then it passes over the iliac vessels and over the inside of the psoas muscle, somewhat higher than in adult bodies; and at last goes between the ureter and bladder towards the basis of the prostate gland.

In those animals where the testicles change their situation, the cremaster muscle, which should be named *musculus testis*, has two very different positions in the fœtus, and in the adult; the first of these is, the same as in those animals whose testicles remain through life in the cavity of the abdomen; we must therefore conclude that the same purposes are answered by this muscle in the fœtus, as in those animals.

The

The use of this muscle, when the testicle is in the scrotum, appears to be evidently that of a suspensory : but what purpose it answers in the fœtus, or in animals whose testicles remain in the abdomen, is not easily imagined, there being no apparent reason why such a muscle should exist.

The cremaster or *musculus testis* appears to be composed of the lower fibres of the *obliquus internus* and *transversalis* muscles in the fœtus, turning upwards instead of going across to the pubis and spreading upon the external surface of the *gubernaculum* immediately under the *peritonæum* ; it appears to be lost on the *peritonæum*, a little way from the testicle ; this is more evidently seen in adult subjects who have had a hydrocele, or rupture ; in such cases the muscle becomes stronger than usual, and its fibres can be traced spreading on the *tunica vaginalis*, and seem at last to be lost upon it near to the lower end of the body of the testicle.

The nerves which supply this muscle are probably branches from the nerves of the *obliquus internus* and *transversalis* muscles, for the same cause which throws the abdominal muscles into action produces a similar effect on the *musculus testis*, which circumstance appears to be most remarkable in the young subject. When we cough or act with the abdominal muscles we find the testicles to be drawn up ; the *musculus testis* and abdominal muscles obeying the same command of the will.

At this time of life the testis is connected in a very particular manner with the parietes of the abdomen, at that place where in adult bodies the spermatic vessels pass out, and likewise with the scrotum. This connection is by means of a substance which runs down from the lower end of the testis to the scrotum, and which at present I shall call the ligament, or *gubernaculum testis*, because it connects the testis with the scrotum, and directs its course in its descent. It is of a pyramidal form ; its large bulbous head is upwards and fixed to the lower end of the testis and epididymis, and its lower and slender extremity is lost in the cellular membrane of the scrotum. The upper part of this ligament is within the abdomen, before the *psoas*, reaching from the testis to the groin, or to where the spermatic vessels begin to pass through the muscles. Here the ligament runs down into the scrotum precisely in the same manner as the spermatic vessels pass down in adult bodies, and is there lost. The lower
part

part of the round ligament of the uterus in a fœtus very much resembles this ligament of the testis; and may be plainly traced down into the labium, where it is imperceptibly lost. That part of the ligamentum testis, which is within the abdomen, is covered by the peritonæum all round, except at its posterior part, which is contiguous to the psoas, and connected with it by the reflected peritonæum, and by the cellular membrane. It is hard to say what the structure or composition of this ligament may be. It is certainly vascular and fibrous, and the fibres run in the direction of the ligament itself. It is covered by the fibres of the cremaster or musculus testis which is placed immediately behind the peritonæum; this is not easily ascertained in the human subject, but is very evident in other animals, more especially in those whose testicles remain in the cavity of the abdomen after the animal is full-grown.

In the hedge-hog the testes continue through life to be lodged within the abdomen, in the same situation as in the human fœtus; and they are fastened by the same kind of ligament to the inside of the parietes of the abdomen at the groin. Now, in that animal, I find that the lowermost fibres of the internal oblique muscle, which constitute the cremaster, are turned inwards at the place where the spermatic vessels come out in other animals, making a smooth edge or lip by their inversion; and that then they mount up in the ligament to the lower end of the testis. Sometimes in the human body, and in many other animals, and very often in sheep, the testes do not descend from the cavity of the abdomen till late in life, or never at all. In the ram, where the testis is come down into the scrotum, the cremaster is a very strong muscle; and, though it be placed more inwards at its beginning, it passes down pretty much as it does in the human body, and is lost on the outside of the tunica vaginalis; but in the ram, whose testis remains suspended in the abdominal cavity, I find that the same cremaster exists, though it is a weaker muscle; and instead of passing downwards, as in the former case, it turns inwards and upwards, and is lost in the peritonæum that covers the ligament which attaches the testis to the parietes of the abdomen, and which in this state of that animal is about an inch and an half in length. In the human fœtus, while the testis is retained in the cavity of the abdomen, the

the cremaster is so slender that I cannot trace it to my own satisfaction, either turning up towards the testis or turning down towards the scrotum. Yet from analogy we may conclude that it passes up to the testicle, since in the adult we find it inserted or lost on the lower part of the tunica vaginalis, in the same manner as in the adult quadruped.

The peritonæum, which covers the testis and its ligament or gubernaculum, is firmly united to the surfaces of those two bodies; but all around, to wit, on the kidney, the psoas, the iliacus internus, and the lower part of the abdominal muscles, that membrane adheres very loosely to all the surfaces which it covers. Where the peritonæum is continued or reflected from the abdominal muscles to the ligament of the testis, it passes first downwards a little way, as if passing out of the abdomen, and then upwards, so as to cover more of the ligament than what is within the cavity of the abdomen. At this place the peritonæum is very loose, thin in its substance, and of a tender gelatinous texture; but all around the passage of that ligament the peritonæum is considerably tighter, thicker, and of a more firm texture. When the abdominal muscles are pulled up so as to tighten and stretch the peritonæum, this membrane remains loose at the passage of the ligament, while it is braced or tight all around; and in that case the tight part forms a kind of border or edge around the loose doubled part of the peritonæum, where the testis is afterwards to pass. This loose part of the peritonæum, like the intro-suscepted gut, may, by drawing the testis upwards, be pulled up into the abdomen, and made tight; and then there is no appearance of an aperture or passage down towards the scrotum: but when the scrotum and ligament are drawn downwards, the loose doubled part of the peritonæum descends with the ligament, and then there is an aperture from the cavity of the abdomen all around the forepart of the ligament, which seems ready to receive the testis. This aperture becomes larger when the testis descends lower, as if the pyramidal or wedge-like ligament was first drawn down, in order not only to direct but to make room for the testis which must follow it. In some fortuses I found the aperture so large, that I could push the testis into it, as far as the tendon of the external oblique muscle.

From

From this original situation within the abdomen the testis is afterwards moved to its destined station in the scrotum. It is the more difficult to ascertain the exact time of this motion, as we hardly ever know the exact age of our subject. According to the observations which I have made, it seems to happen sooner in some instances than in others, but generally about the eighth month. In the seventh month I have commonly found the testis in the abdomen, and in the ninth I have as commonly found it in the upper part of the scrotum. The descent being thus early and the passage being almost immediately closed is the principal means of preventing the hernia congenita.

At the before mentioned period, the testis moves downwards till its lower extremity comes into contact with the lower part of the abdominal parietes. By this time the upper part of the ligament, which hitherto was within the abdomen, has sunk downwards, lies in the passage from the abdomen to the scrotum, and lies in that passage which is afterwards to receive the testis. As the testicle passes out, it in some degree inverts the situation of the ligament passing down behind it. What was the anterior surface of the ligament while in the abdomen now becoming posterior and composing the lower and anterior part of the tunica vaginalis on which the musculus testis is lost: this is more evident in those animals whose testicles readily pass from the abdomen to the scrotum. The place where the ligament is most confined, and where the testis meets with most obstruction in its descent, is the ring in the tendon of the external oblique muscle; and accordingly I think we see more men who have one testis, or both, lodged immediately within the tendon of that muscle, than who have one or both still included in the cavity of the abdomen, which I shall take notice of hereafter.

After the testis has got quite through the tendon of the external oblique muscle, it may be considered as possessing its determined station; though it commonly remains for some time by the side of the penis, and by degrees only descends to the bottom of the scrotum. And when the testis has descended entirely into the scrotum, its ligament is still connected with it, and lies immediately under it, but is shortened and compressed.

C

Having

Having now given an account of the original situation of the testes, of the time of their descent from the abdomen, and of the route which they take in their removal to the scrotum, I shall in the next place describe the manner in which they carry down the peritonæum with them, and then explain how that membrane forms the sac of the hernia congenita in some bodies, and the tunica vaginalis propria in others.

When the testis is descending, and when it has even passed into the scrotum, it is still covered by the peritonæum, exactly in the same manner as when it was within the abdomen; and the spermatic vessels run down behind the peritonæum there, as they did when the testis lay before the psoas muscle; and that lamella of the peritonæum is united behind with the testis, the epididymis, and the spermatic vessels (besides the vas deferens) as it was in the loins; and the testis is fixed backwards to the parts against which it rests, and is unconnected and loose forwards, as it was when in the abdomen. In coming down the testis brings the peritonæum with it; and the elongation of that membrane, though in some circumstances it be like a common hernial sac, yet in others is very different. If we can imagine a common hernial sac reaching to the bottom of the scrotum, and covered by the cremaster muscle, and that the posterior half of the sac covers, and is united with, the testis, epididymis, spermatic vessels, and vas deferens, and that the anterior half of the sac lies loose before all those parts, it will give a perfect idea of the state of the peritonæum, and of the testis when it comes first down into the scrotum. The testis therefore in its descent does not fall loose, like the intestine or epiploon, into the elongation of the peritonæum; but it slides down from the loins, carrying the peritonæum with it; and both itself and the peritonæum continue to adhere by the cellular membrane to the parts behind them, as they did when in the loins. This is a circumstance which I think may be easily understood; and yet I should suppose that it may not be so very intelligible, because I find students very generally puzzled with it, and imagine that, when the testis comes first down, it should be loose all around, like a piece of the gut or epiploon in a common hernia. The ductility of the peritonæum, and its very loose connection by a slight cellular membrane to the psoas, and to all the other parts
around

around the testis, are circumstances which favour its elongation and descent into the scrotum with the testis. This peculiarity of descent often takes place in some of the intestines; but it can only happen in those which have adhesions to the loins. This I suspect to be rather the consequence of a rupture already formed, than the cause of the first formation of the hernial sac, in which the intestine lies, and I should suppose could only form very gradually. The cæcum has been sometimes found to have descended into the scrotum, and to have brought along with it its adhesions through its whole course: the same thing has happened to the sigmoide flexure of the colon; and I have found the whole of it in the left side of the scrotum, with its adhesions brought down from the loins. Such herniæ cannot be reduced; and in case of strangulation are not to be operated upon in the common way; the sac should not be opened, but the stricture divided, and the newly protruded part reduced.

It is plain from this description, that the cavity of the bag, or of the elongation of the peritonæum, which contains the testis in the scrotum, must at first communicate with the general cavity of the abdomen, by an aperture at the inside of the groin. That aperture has exactly the appearance of a common hernial sac: the spermatic vessels and vas deferens lie immediately behind it, and a probe passes readily through it from the general cavity of the abdomen down to the bottom of the scrotum. And if this process of the peritonæum be laid open through its whole length on the forepart, it will be plainly seen to be a continuation of the peritonæum; the testis and epididymis will be seen at the lower part of it; and the spermatic vessels and the vas deferens will be seen covered by the posterior part of the bag, in their whole course from the groin to the testis.

Thus it is in the human body, when the testis is recently come down; and thus it is, and continues to be through life, in every quadruped which I have examined, where the testis is in the scrotum; but in the human body the communication between the sac and the cavity of the abdomen is soon cut off: indeed I believe that the upper part of the sac naturally begins to contract as soon as the testis has passed through the muscles. This opinion is grounded on the following observation.

C 2

I have

I have seen an instance where from the age of the fœtus and from every other mark, it was probable that the testis was very recently come down, and yet the upper part of the sac was very narrow: I pushed the testis upwards, in order to see if it could be returned; the attachments of the testis easily admitted of its ascent, and so did the aperture in the tendon of the external oblique muscle; but the orifice and upper end of the sac would not, by any means, admit of the testis being pushed quite up into the abdomen. However this may be, the upper end of the sac certainly contracts, and unites first, and is quite closed in a very short space of time; for it is seldom that any aperture remains in a child born at its full time; and this contraction and union is continued downwards till it comes near the testicle, where the disposition for such an operation does not exist, leaving the lower part of the sac open or loose, even in the human subject, through life, and forms the tunica testis vaginalis propria, the common seat of an hydrocele. Many cases of hydrocele in children seem to prove that the progress of this contraction and union is downwards, for in them the water commonly extends higher up the chord than in the adult, except in those of a considerable size; but in some children this union seems not to take place regularly, but is interrupted in the middle, producing an hydrocele of the chord, which neither communicates with the abdomen or tunica vaginalis testis. This contraction and obliteration of the passage seems to be a peculiar operation of nature, depending upon steady and uniform principles, and not the consequence of inflammation, or of any thing that is accidental: and therefore, if it is not accomplished at the proper time, the difficulty of bringing about an union of the part is much greater; as in children who have had the sac kept open by a turn of the intestine falling down into the scrotum immediately after the testis. This looks as if nature, from being balked when she was in the humour of doing her work, would not, or could not so easily do it afterwards. I shall readily grant that what has been advanced here as a proof of the doctrine, may be explained upon other principles. This at least is certain, that the closing of the mouth, and of the neck of the sac, is peculiar to the human species; and we must suppose the final cause to be the prevention of ruptures, to which men are so much more liable than

than beasts, from their erect state of body. In some cases the aperture of the sac is not entirely closed, allowing a fluid to pass down and form a hydrocele, which fluid upon pressure can be squeezed back into the belly; cases of this kind sometimes give the idea of a gut being protruded, and make it difficult to determine the exact nature of the case.

What is the immediate cause of the descent of the testis from the loins to the scrotum? It is evident that it cannot be the compressive force of respiration, because commonly the testis is in the scrotum before the child has breathed; that is, the effect has been produced before the supposed cause has existed. Is the testis pulled down by the cremaster muscle? I can hardly suppose that it is; because, if that was the case, I see no reason why it should not take place in the hedge-hog, as well as in other quadrupeds; and if the musculus testis had this power, it could not bring it lower than the ring of the muscle.

Why do the testes take their blood-vessels from such distant trunks? Those physiologists, who have puzzled themselves about the solution of this question, have not considered, that in the first formation of the body, the testes are situated, not in the scrotum, but immediately below the kidneys; and that therefore it was very natural that their blood-vessels should rise in the same manner as those of the kidneys, but a little lower. The great length of the spermatic vessels in the adult body will no doubt occasion a more languid circulation, which, we may suppose, was the intention of nature.

The situation of the testis in the fœtus may likewise account for the contrary directions of the epididymis and of the vas deferens in adult bodies, though these two in reality make only one excretory canal. In the fœtus the epididymis begins at the upper end of the testis; and it is natural, considering it as an excretory tube, that it should run downwards. And it is as natural that the rest of the tube, which is called vas deferens, should turn inwards at the lower end of the testis, because that is its most direct course to the neck of the bladder. Thus we see that in the fœtus the excretory duct is always passing downwards. But the testis is directed in its descent by the gubernaculum; and this is firmly fixed to the lower parts of the testis and epididymis, and

and to the beginning of the vas deferens, and thence must keep those parts invariable in their situation with respect to one another: and therefore in proportion as the testis descends, the vas deferens must ascend from the lower end of the testis; and it must, from the passage through the abdominal muscles down to the testis, run parallel with the spermatic vessels.

The testis, its coats, and the spermatic chord, are so often concerned in some of the most important diseases and operations of surgery, particularly in the bubonocoe and hydrocoe, that their structure has been examined and described by the surgeons, as well as by the anatomists, of every age. Yet the descriptions of the clearest and best writers upon the subject differ so much from one another, and many of them differ so much from what is obvious and demonstrable by dissection, that it would seem difficult to account for such a variety of opinions. The very different state of the parts in the quadruped, and in the human body, no doubt, must have occasioned error and confusion among the writers of more antient times, when the parts of the human body were described from dissections and observations made principally upon brutes. and the circumstances in the structure of the parts, which are peculiar to the fœtus, having been imperfectly understood, we may suppose, has likewise contributed to make perplexity and contradiction among authors.

Baron Haller, in his *Opuscula Pathologica*, has observed, that in infants, sometimes the intestine falls down into the scrotum after the testis, or along with it, and occasions what he calls the *hernia congenita*. In such a case the hernial sac is formed before the intestine falls down, as that ingenious anatomist has observed. There are besides two very peculiar circumstances in a rupture of this kind; the intestine is always in immediate contact with the testis, and there is no *tunica vaginalis propria testis*. The structure of the parts in the fœtus explains, in the most satisfactory manner, both those circumstances, however extraordinary they must appear to a man who is only conversant with the structure of the parts in subjects of a more advanced age: and indeed it is so clear that it needs no illustration. I may observe, however, that the *hernia congenita* may happen, not only by the intestine falling down to the testis before the aperture of the sac be closed,

closed, but perhaps afterwards: for when the sac has been but recently closed, it seems possible enough that violence may open it again.

It must likewise be obvious to every anatomist, who examines the state of the testis in children of different ages, that the mouth and neck only of the sac close up, and that the lower part of the sac remains loose around the testis, and makes the tunica vaginalis propria. Whence it is plain that this tunic was originally a part of the elongated peritoneum: and as that tunic is undoubtedly the seat of the true hydrocele, it is also plain that the hernia congenita and the true hydrocele cannot exist together in the same side of the scrotum; for when there is a hernia congenita, there is no other cavity than that of the hernial sac; and that cavity communicates with the general cavity of the abdomen.

The observations, contained in the two last paragraphs, occurred to my brother upon reading Baron Haller's *Opuscula Pathologica*, and gave rise to my inquiries upon this subject.

Having given an account of the situation of the testicles in the fœtus, of their descent, and the circumstances attending it, I shall next consider the cases where this change takes place in one or both testicles later than the usual or natural time: and having taken notice of the consequences of this descent when it happens at so late a period, I shall proceed to mention those cases in which the testicles never pass out of the abdomen.

I have said, that the early coming down of the testicles, and closing of the mouth of the sac, by usually taking place before birth, hinder the descent of any part of the abdominal viscera; but when the testicles remain in their first situation beyond this period, these advantages are lost; a part of the intestines or epiploon being liable to descend along with them.

The first or natural process, in some instances, not having been begun, or having been interrupted before birth, it becomes afterwards very uncertain when the descent will be completed; yet I think the completion most frequently happens between the years of two and ten, while the person is young and growing, being seldom delayed beyond the age of puberty.

It is not easy to ascertain the cause of this failure in the descent of the testicle; but I am inclined to suspect that the fault originates in the testicles themselves; it is however certain that the testicle which has completed

pleated its descent, is the largest, which is more evident in the quadruped than in the human subject; as in these we can have an opportunity of examining the parts when we please, and can determine how small, in comparison with the other, that testicle is which has exceeded the usual time of coming down; it never descends so low as the other.

The descent of that testicle is very slow, which is not completed before birth, often requiring years for that purpose; it sometimes never reaching the scrotum, especially the lower part of it. There is oftner I believe an inequality in the situation of the two testicles than is commonly imagined; they are seldom equally low in the scrotum; and I am of opinion that the lowest is the most vigorous, having taken the lead readily and come to its place at once: the part where it meets with the greatest difficulty in its descent, is in the division of the tendon of the external oblique muscle, called the ring.

How far an erect position of body, the action of the abdominal muscles, and the effort produced upon the contents of the abdomen in breathing, may contribute mechanically to the descent of the testicles when the natural operations of the animal œconomy have failed, I will not pretend to decide; but when we see these combined actions producing an unnatural descent of a portion of intestine, we may conceive that they are likewise capable of contributing to the descent of the testicle.

When the testicle has remained in the cavity of the abdomen beyond the usual time, it is impossible to say whether the disposition for closing up the passage, after it has passed out, is in some measure lost or not; but when it comes down after birth, we can easily suppose some portion of intestine or epiploon more ready to descend and prevent the closing of the mouth of the sac, than before the child was born when no such actions had taken place; we should therefore watch this descent of the testicle, and endeavour by art to procure that union which the natural powers are either not disposed to perform, or are prevented from completing by the descent of other parts. But art should not be used too soon, nor till the testicle has got a little way below the ring. As this progress is very slow, especially when the testicle is creeping through the ring, a doubt

doubt often arises in the mind, whether it is better entirely to prevent its passage, or to assist it by exercise or other means; it would certainly be the best practice to assist it if that could be done effectually. When it has got upon the outside of the tendon it in general can be easily pushed up again into the abdomen; and in these two situations it will sometimes play backwards and forwards, for years, without ever coming low enough to allow of the use of artificial means to prevent its descent, or to prevent a rupture. In this case it becomes difficult to determine what should be done; but from what I have seen I should be inclined to wait the descent and give it every assistance in my power. Indeed in all cases I would advise waiting with patience; for in most of those which I have seen, years have elapsed from the first appearance of the testicle under the ring of the abdominal muscle before it has reached that situation in which we may safely apply a truss. I never perceived that any inconvenience arose from waiting; and the danger, if there is any, may be in some degree avoided. I have always recommended moderate, not violent exercise.

When the testicle has got some way below the ring then the case is to be treated as an inguinal hernia, and a truss applied upon the ring above the testicle; taking care the testicle is not injured by it: but as this generally happens at too early a period for the patients themselves to be able to attend to it, it becomes the more necessary that the surgeon who is employed should be very attentive, and that those who have the charge of their education should watch them with particular care.

If it is thought advisable to prevent the testicle from coming down, a truss is equally adapted for that purpose, as for preventing the descent of an intestine where there is an hernial sac.

It sometimes happens that one of the testicles remains in the cavity of the abdomen through life, never assuming the disposition to change its situation; when this happens, the person naturally concludes that he has only one testicle; and it can only be known that he had two by an examination of these parts after death: it is however possible in some instances that one may be wanting; but if we are to reason from analogy, we must suppose this very seldom to be the case. As it is a very common circumstance for many quadrupeds to have only one testicle in the

D

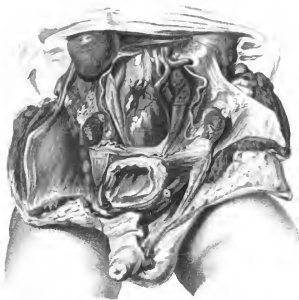
scrotum,

scrotum, and in such which are killed for food, and from that circumstance come more particularly under observation, we in general find the other in the cavity of the abdomen; and in some instances they are both found lying in that cavity.

When both testicles remain through life in the belly, I believe that they are exceedingly imperfect, and incapable of performing the natural functions of those organs; and this imperfection prevents the disposition for their descent taking place. They are more defective than those which are late in coming into the scrotum. This is very evident in the quadruped, for in them the testicle which has reached the scrotum is considerably larger than that which remains in the abdomen. It is probable that it is a tendency towards an hermaphrodite, the testicle seldom being well formed. In such cases nothing is to be done by art; as it is not possible to give the stimulus of perfection to such testicles, which I believe is necessary to make them assume the disposition which is requisite for their descent; and the ring of the external oblique muscle is probably less liable, in these instances, to allow of the descent of a portion of intestine than where the testicles have passed through it; such persons being perhaps more secure from accidents of this kind than if they had been more perfectly formed.

That the descriptions which I have given may be better understood I have annexed three figures that were carefully taken from nature.

Fig. I.



*Out-lines
of
Fig. I.*



et l'Anatomie del

- P. C. V. f. sculp.

P L A T E I.

THE first figure represents the testes within the abdomen, in an abortive fœtus of about six months. All the intestines, except the rectum, are removed; and the peritonæum in most places is left upon the surfaces which it covers, so that the parts have not that sharpness and distinct appearance which might have been given to them by dissection.

A The upper part of the object, covered with a cloth.

BB The thighs.

C The penis.

D The scrotum.

E The flap of the integuments, abdominal muscles, and peritonæum, turned back over the right os iliûm to bring the testis into view.

F The flap of the skin and cellular membrane of the left side disposed in the same manner.

G The flap of the abdominal muscles and of the peritonæum of the left side turned back over the spine of the os iliûm. The lower part of this flap is cut away, in order to shew the ligament of the testis passing down through the ring into the scrotum.

HH The lower part of each kidney.

I The projection formed by the lower vertebræ lumborum, and by the bifurcation of the aorta and vena cava.

K The rectum filled with meconium, and tied at its upper part where the colon was cut away.

L That branch of the inferior mesenteric artery which was going to the colon.

M The lower branch of the same artery, which went down into the pelvis behind the rectum.

N The lower part of the bladder, that part of it which is higher than the ossa pubis in so young a fœtus being cut away.

OO The hypogastric or umbilical arteries cut through, where they were turning up by the sides of the bladder in their way to the navel.

PP The ureter of each side passing down before the psoas muscle and iliac vessels, in its course to the lower part of the bladder.

D 2

QQ The

QQ The spermatic arteries running a little serpentine.

RR The testes situated before the psoæ muscles, a little higher than the inguina. In this figure the interior edge of the testis is turned a little outwards, to show the spermatic vessels coming forwards to the posterior edge of the testis, in the duplicature of the peritonæum: which duplicature connects the testis, incloses its vessels, and gives it an external smooth coat, much after the same manner as the duplicature of the mesentery connects the intestine, conveys its vessels, and gives it a polished covering.

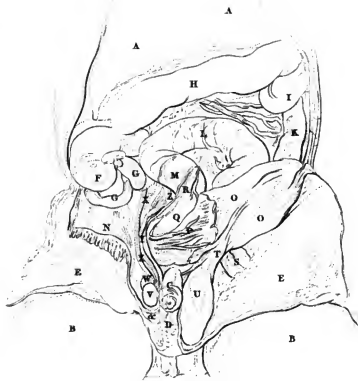
The beginning of the epididymis is seen at the upper end of the testis, from which it runs down on the outside (and therefore in this view behind the body) of the testis.

SS The vas deferens of each side passing across, in a serpentine course, from the extremity of the epididymis at the outside of the lower end of the testis, and then before the lower part of the ureter, in its way to the vesicula seminalis.

TT What I have called the gubernacula or ligaments of the testes in a fœtus. On the left side this ligament is entire, so that it is seen going down from the lower end of the testis, through the ring of the muscle, into the scrotum: but on the right side its upper and forepart is cut away, that the continuity of the epididymis and vas deferens may be seen; and no more of the ligament is exhibited than what is situated within the cavity of the abdomen.

N. B. The lower part of the ligament, as it is seen in the right side of this figure, lies so loose in the passage through the muscles, and is there so loosely covered by the peritonæum, that, when the testis is pulled up, more of the ligament is seen within the cavity of the abdomen, and then the peritonæum is made tight and smooth at that place; but, on the contrary, when the scrotum is pulled downwards the lower part of the ligament is dragged some way down through the passage in the muscles, and the loose peritonæum is carried along with it; so that then there is a small elongation of that membrane, with an orifice from the cavity of the belly, like the mouth of a small hernial sac, on the forepart of the ligament.

PLATE II.

Out-line of Fig. II.

11.1.60

Fig. II.



J. A. Riccardi del.

— P. C. Jones sculp. —

P L A T E II.

THE second figure represents nearly the same parts in a fœtus, somewhat older, in order to shew the state of the testes when they have recently descended from the abdomen into the scrotum. The small intestines are removed, and the large intestines are left in their natural situation.

AA The liver, in out-lines.

BB The thighs, unfinished.

C The penis.

D The middle part of the scrotum; on each side of which the forepart of the scrotum is cut away, that the testes may be seen.

EE The two flaps of the skin and of the cellular membrane dissected off from the lower part of the abdomen, and turned down upon the thighs.

F The intestinum cœcum.

GG The appendicula cœci vermiformis.

H The arch of the colon.

I The turn of the colon under the spleen.

K The colon passing down on the outside of the left kidney.

L The last turn of the colon, commonly called its sigmoid flexure, which in adults is seated quite in the cavity of the pelvis.

M The beginning of the rectum.

N Part of the abdominal muscles of the right side, with the smooth investing peritonæum, turned back over the spine of the os ilium.

OO The lower part of the obliquus externus muscle of the left side.

P The lower part of the rectus muscle of the right side, turned outwards, and towards the left side, so that the epigastric artery is seen going to the inside of that muscle.

Q The forepart of the bladder.

R The urachus, as it is called.

S The crural vessels coming into the thigh from behind the ligamentum Fallopi.

T The

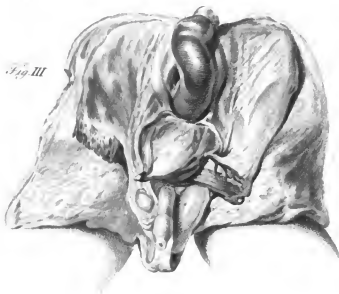
- T The external appearance of the spermatic rope of the left side.
- U The external appearance of the testis, when its tunica vaginalis, or process of the peritonæum, is a little distended with air or water poured into it from the cavity of the abdomen.
- V The right testis, brought fully into view by laying open the process of the peritonæum in its whole length.
- W The epididymis of the same side.
- XX The spermatic vessels.
- Y The vas deferens. *N. B.* The peritonæum lies before the spermatic vessels and vas deferens, or covers them within the abdomen; and its process or elongation covers them in the same manner all the way from the abdominal muscles downwards; so that if the intestine slips down after the testis in a fœtus it must be placed before the spermatic vessels and vas deferens.
- Z The ureter.
- & The remains of the gubernaculum or ligament which bound and conducted the testis to the scrotum.

N. B. It is evident that part of the peritonæum, which in this figure, is carried down in the form of a hernial sac to a little below the testis, lies before the testis, epididymis, spermatic vessels, and vas deferens, and that it covers those parts in the same manner as it covers the abdominal viscera, viz. the posterior part of the sac (supposing the sac to be cut lengthways into two halves) is united with them, and gives them a smooth surface, while the anterior half of the sac lies loose before them, and may be removed to some distance from them, as when the sac is distended with water.

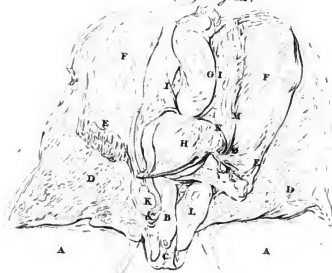
11.1.60

22 A

Fig. III.



Out-lines of Fig. III.



J. W. Ansell del.

J. W. Ansell sculp.

P L A T E III.

THE third figure represents the testes, &c. in the same subject; all the parts above the ossa iliūm being cut away, and the abdominal muscles and the bladder being turned downwards.

AA The thighs, unfinished.

B The penis.

C The middle part of the scrotum, its lateral parts being removed to show the testes.

DD The skin and cellular membrane of the abdomen turned down over the thighs.

EE Part of the abdominal muscles and peritonæum turned down at each groin.

FF The peritonæum covering the iliac internus muscle of each side.

G The intestinum rectum filled with meconium.

H The bladder with the umbilical artery on each side of it, turned a little forwards over the symphysis of the pubes.

II The ureters passing over the iliac vessels to the pelvis.

K The right testis exposed, as in Fig. II. V. W. XX. Y.

L The left testis inclosed in the process of the peritonæum, See Fig. II. U.

M The spermatic vessels of the left side, seen through the peritonæum which covers them, in their descent through the abdominal muscles at the groin.

N The left vas deferens seen through the peritonæum, in its passage from the mouth of the sac to the posterior part of the bladder.

O The mouth or aperture of the process of the peritonæum, whereby its mouth or cavity communicates with the general cavity of the belly. This aperture closes up, and the membrane becomes smooth at this place, when the fœtus grows a little older; unless when the gut falls down after the testis; and keeps it open. In that case it makes the mouth of the hernial sac.

P The left epigastric artery branching upon the inside of the rectus muscle, which is here turned downwards and outwards. This artery is always situated, as in this figure, on the inside of the mouth of the hernial sac, or passage of the spermatic vessels.

PLATE IV.



P L A T E IV.

A Side view of the pelvis of a young ram, to show the right testicle remaining in the cavity of the abdomen, after the left had come down, but which is removed with that half of the pelvis.

The testicle which lies in the loins is flatter than common, and is only attached by one edge, which is principally by the epididymis; there is also a ligament passing from the upper part of the common attachment which binds the testicle to the posterior part of the abdominal muscles; this is analogous to the ligament that attaches the ovarium to the same part in the female quadruped.

The epididymis passes along the outer or posterior edge; and at the lower part becomes larger and pendulous, making a little twist upon itself where it becomes vas deferens.

The vas deferens is a little contorted, and passes down obliquely over the psoas muscle to the bladder.

From the lower end of the testicle there is a ridge continued along the psoas muscle through the abdominal ring, going on to the scrotum, which is most probably the gubernaculum; but it was so much covered by a hard suety fat, that I could not exactly ascertain its structure: at the lower part of this ridge, about an inch and half from the ring, I found the termination of the cremaster, which was a tolerable large muscle; part of its fibres seemed to arise in common with the internal oblique; while the rest appeared to come from the psoas and iliacus internus behind it; the outer portion passed inwards and downwards, and spread upon the forepart of the ridge, or gubernaculum, where the greatest part of its fibres were lost, and the rest of them were continued into the back part of it. The posterior portion got upon the inside of the ridge and was lost in the same manner as the former.

A The inside of the thigh, only having the outline drawn.

BB The inside of the abdominal muscles spread out.

C The symphysis of the os pubis.

E

D The

- D The muscles of the thigh cut through at their origin where they arise from a middle tendon.
E The lower end of the right kidney.
F G The iliac vessels exposed to show their situation.
H The remains of the umbilical artery.
I The urinary bladder.
K The body of the right testicle, with the ramifications of the veins upon the surface.
L The epididymis.
M The vas deferens.
N The vesiculæ, commonly called seminales.

OBSERVATIONS

OBSERVATIONS ON THE GLANDS SITUATED BETWEEN THE RECTUM AND BLADDER, CALLED VESICULÆ SEMINALES.

THE bags situated between the bladder and rectum in the male of some animals, which are commonly called *vesiculæ seminales*, have been considered as reservoirs for the semen, secreted by the testicles in the same manner as the gall-bladder is supposed to be a reservoir for the bile. Physiologists must have been led to this opinion from observing that, in the human subject their ducts communicate with the *vasa deferentia* before their termination in the urethra. This communication was supposed to allow the semen, when not immediately wanted, to pass into these bags from the *vasa deferentia* by a species of regurgitation. But more accurate observations respecting their structure and contents in the human subject, and on similar parts in other animals supposed to answer the same purpose, joined to the circumstance of their not being found in every class, induced me to conclude that this opinion was erroneous. To throw as much light upon this subject as possible, I made a number of experiments, and availed myself of every opportunity which offered of examining whatever could in any way elucidate the point; and from what I have been able to collect, I think it will appear that they do not serve the purpose of reservoirs of the semen.

To proceed regularly with my investigation, I shall begin by comparing the contents of these *vesiculæ* with the semen as it is emitted from the penis of a living man: from which comparison it appears that the two secretions are very different in their sensible properties of colour and smell; and although the semen which constitutes the first part of the emission is evidently different from the last, yet every part of it is unlike the mucus found in these *vesiculæ*.

The semen first discharged from the living body is of a bluish white colour, in consistence like cream, and similar to what is found in the

vafa deferentia after death: while that which follows is somewhat like the common mucus of the nose, but less viscid. The semen becomes more fluid upon exposure to the air, particularly that first thrown out; which is the very reverse of what happens to secretions in general. The smell of the semen is maukish and unpleasant, exactly resembling that of the farina of the Spanish chestnut. The taste is at first insipid; yet there is somewhat of pungency in it, which after some little time stimulates and excites a degree of warmth in the mouth. The fluid contained in these vesiculæ, in a dead body, is of a brownish colour, and often varies in its consistence in different parts of the bag, as if not well mixed. Its smell does not resemble that of the semen; and it does not become more fluid by being exposed to the air.

It may however be objected, that the contents of the vesiculæ are generally found in a putrid state, and have by that means undergone a change in their sensible properties. But the objection is readily obviated by comparing this fluid with that in the *vafa deferentia* as it comes from the testicles of the same dead body, between which there appears to be no resemblance. To be still more certain of the nature of the contents of these vesiculæ, than was possible from the examination of bodies which had been dead some time, I took an opportunity of opening a man immediately after his death, who had been killed by a cannon-ball. The fluid in the vesiculæ was of a lighter colour than is usually found in men who have been dead a considerable time; but it was not by any means like the semen either in colour or smell. In another man who died instantaneously, in consequence of falling a considerable height, and whose body I inspected soon after the accident, I found the contents of the vesiculæ of a lightish whey colour, having nothing of the smell of semen; and in so fluid a state as to run out on cutting into them.

I have likewise examined with attention a mucus which some men discharge upon straining hard while at stool, or after throwing out the last drops of urine, an action which requires a considerable exertion of the parts. This discharge is generally called a feminal weakness, and is I believe commonly supposed to be the semen; but in all the cases of

* Vide Treatise on the Venereal Disease, page 197.

this

this kind in which I have been consulted, it nearly resembled the contents of the vesiculæ in the dead body; perhaps not quite of so deep a colour. I endeavoured in vain to persuade a gentleman who had this complaint, that the discharge was not seminal; till by examining his own semen, and comparing it with that mucus, he was convinced of the difference. This gentleman had the power of emitting the semen in the same quantity as usual, immediately after the mucus had been discharged, which is a further proof that this fluid is not semen.*

In this country eunuchs seldom come under our examination. We have sometimes however opportunities of opening the bodies of those who have, in consequence of disease or accident, lost one or both testicles; and several subjects of this kind I have inspected after death. Persons who have only lost one testicle are more to our present purpose than those who have been deprived of both. For it is to be presumed that such men have afterwards had connection with women, and consequently had the action of emission, which must have emptied the vesiculæ of the castrated side, if these had contained semen; and as they could not be replenished, they should have been found empty after death. We have also in such cases an opportunity of making comparative observations between the vesiculæ of the perfect and those of the imperfect side. In the eunuch such emissions never can happen; for the testicles being gone, the natural and leading stimulus is lost; therefore if in them the vesiculæ were found full after death, it might be supposed to be the semen which they had received from the testicles before castration, and which had remained there ever since. But as castration is in such cases usually performed on children, this circumstance should rather be considered as a proof that they secrete their own mucus; yet it is probable they will neither be so large nor so full in them as in the perfect man; for I am of opinion that they are connected with generation; and that if the constitution is deprived of that power, they will not grow to the full size. But where only one testicle is removed, its loss does not in the least affect

* The discharge was truly supposed to be the contents of the vesiculæ; and it being imagined that those contained semen, according to this reasoning, the discharge must be seminal.

generation,

generation, therefore does not produce any change in the vesicula of that side from which the testicle is taken ; because the vesicula does not depend upon the testicle for its secretion, but upon the constitution, and the person being capable of the action of generation.

A man who was under my care in St. George's Hospital for a venereal complaint, died there, and was discovered to have lost his right testicle. From the cicatrix being hardly observable, it must have been removed some considerable time before his death ; and the complaint for which he was received into the hospital is a convincing proof that he had connection with women after that period.

I inspected the body in the presence of Mr. Hodges, the house-surgeon, and several of the pupils of the hospital. Upon dissecting out and examining the contents of the pelvis, with the penis and scrotum, I found that the vas deferens of the right side was smaller and firmer in its texture than the other, especially at that end next to the abdominal rings, near to the part that had been cut through in the operation. The cellular membrane surrounding the duct on the right side was not so loose as on the left ; neither were the vessels which ramified on the right vesicula so full of blood. But upon opening the vesiculæ, both appeared to be filled with a kind of mucus similar to that which is found in other dead bodies ; and the vesicula of the right side was rather larger than that on the left. Whatever therefore may be the real use of these vesiculæ, we have a proof from this dissection, that in the human subject they do not contain the semen.

In a man who died in St. George's Hospital with a very large bubonocoele, the testicle of that side was discovered to have almost lost its natural texture from the pressure of the hernial sac ; and upon examining the testicle with attention, there was no appearance of vas deferens till we came near the bladder, where it was almost as large as usual. The vesicula of that side was found to be as full as the other, and to contain the same kind of mucus.

I extirpated the left testicle of a Frenchman on account of its being diseased. He was a married man, and died about a year afterwards, having been extremely ill for several months before his death. On examining

amining the body, the vesiculæ were both found nearly full; more especially that of the left side, which I suppose might be accidental. But upon examining the vas deferens of the left side, where it lies along the side of this bag, and where it has a similar structure with the vesiculæ, I found it filled with the same kind of mucus; and this I believe is always the case, whether the testicle has been removed or not.

A young man, a coachman, who had a disease in his left testicle, had it removed, at St. George's Hospital, by Mr. Walker, in August 1785; and in February 1786 he returned again to the hospital, on account of uncommon pains all over him, and for which he requested to be put into the warm bath. But as he was going from the ward to the bath he dropped down and died almost immediately. The body was inspected, with a view to discover the cause of his death; and upon an examination of the vesiculæ, the bag of the left side was as full as that on the right; and the contents in both were exactly similar.

In dissecting a male-subject, in the year 1755, for a side view of the contents of the pelvis, I found a bag on the left side, lying contiguous to the peritonæum, just on the side of the pelvis where the internal iliac vessels divide above the angle of reflection of the peritonæum at the union of the bladder and rectum. The left vas deferens was seen passing on to this bag; and what is very singular, that of the right, or opposite side, crossed the bladder near its union with the rectum to join it. I traced the left vas deferens down to the testicle; but on following the right through the ring of the external oblique muscle, I discovered that it terminated at once, about an inch from its passage out of the abdomen, in a blunt point, which was impervious. On examining the spermatic chord from this point to the testicle, I could not find any vas deferens; but by beginning at the testicle, and tracing the epididymis from its origin about half way along where it lies upon the body of the testicle, I found that it at first became straight, and soon after seemed to terminate in a point. The canal at this part was so large as to allow of being filled with quicksilver, which however did not pass far, so that a portion of the epididymis was wanting; and the vas deferens for nearly the whole length

length of the spermatic chord of the right side.^a On the left side the vas deferens begun where the epididymis commonly terminates; and there was a deficiency of nearly an inch of the extremity of the epididymis.^b I then dissected the bag above mentioned, which proved to be the two vesiculæ; for by blowing air from one vas deferens, I could only inflate half of it; and from the other vas deferens, the other half. They contained the mucus commonly found in these bags; but upon the most accurate examination I could discover no duct leading from them to the prostate gland, nor any remains of one.

In this subject it was evident that there was no communication between the vas deferens and epididymis; nor between these bags and the urethra. The caput gallinaginis had the common appearance; but there were no orifices to be seen. The testicles were very sound, and the ducts from them to the epididymis were very manifest and full of semen.^c

^a Vide plate I, fig. 1.

^b Vide plate I, fig. 2.

^c As the semen, in consequence of this preternatural formation of parts, could not be conveyed to the urethra in the usual way, I conceived it possible that there might be another unnatural construction to make up for the deficiency in the vas deferens, and therefore examined it very carefully to see if there were no supernumerary vasa deferentia. I was led to do this more particularly from often finding parts resembling them where they could answer no kind of purpose. By a supernumerary vas deferens, I mean a small duct which sometimes arises from the epididymis, and passes up the spermatic chord along with the vas deferens, and commonly terminates in a blind end, near to which it is sometimes a little enlarged. I never found this duct go on to the urethra; but in some instances have seen it accompany the vas deferens as far as the brim of the pelvis. There is no absolute proof that this is a supernumerary vas deferens; but as we find the ducts of glands in general very subject to singularities, and that there are frequently supernumerary ducts, there being often two ureters to one kidney, sometimes distinct from beginning to end; at other times both arising from one pelvis. These ducts, arising from the epididymis, I am inclined to believe, from analogy, are of a nature similar to the double ureters. They resemble the vas deferens, as being continuations of some of the tubes of the epididymis; are convoluted where they come off from it; and afterwards become a straight canal, passing along with it for some way, when they are commonly obliterated.

The idea of their being for the purpose of returning the superfluous semen to the circulation is certainly erroneous, from their being so seldom met with, and so very seldom continued further than the brim of the pelvis.

From

From these circumstances we have a presumptive proof, that the semen can be absorbed in the body of the testicle, and in the epididymis; and that the vesiculæ secrete a mucus which they are capable of absorbing when it cannot be made use of. We may likewise infer from what has been said, that the semen is not retained in reservoirs after it is secreted, and kept there till it is used; but that it is secreted at the time in consequence of certain affections of the mind stimulating the testicles to this action: for we find, that if lascivious ideas are excited in the mind, and the paroxysm is afterwards prevented from coming on, the testicles become painful and swelled from the quantity of semen secreted and the increased action of the vessels; which pain and swelling is removed immediately upon the paroxysm being brought on and the semen evacuated; but if that does not take place, the action of the vessels is still kept up, and the pain in the testicles will in general continue till the paroxysm and evacuation of the semen is brought on, which renders the act complete; without which a stop cannot be put to the action of the vessels that produce the secretion, nor the parts be allowed to fall back into their natural state. There is at this time no sensation of any kind felt in the seat of the vesiculæ seminales. The pain in the testicles, in consequence of being filled with semen and the action being incomplete, is sometimes so considerable as to make it necessary to produce an evacuation of the semen to relieve the patient.

It may be observed, in support of this opinion, that these bags are as full of mucus in bodies much emaciated, where the person has died from a lingering disease, as in strong robust bodies where death has happened from violence or acute diseases; and they are nearly as full in the old as in the young; which most probably would not be the case if they contained semen. These facts, taken from the human subject, are, I think, sufficient to establish the opinion which I have laid down; but for the satisfaction of others, I shall give such facts and observations as have occurred in my dissection of other animals; confining myself to those which tend to clear up the point in question.

These vesiculæ are not similar either in shape or contents in any two genera of animals which I have dissected; and they differ more in size,

F

according

according to the bulk of the animal, than any other parts whose uses in different animals are the same; while the semen in most of those which I have examined may be said to be similar.

The analogy which obtains between these bags and the gall-bladder, in the human subject, by no means holds equally good when applied to other animals. In the horse they are two bags like small urinary bladders, almost loose and pendulous, with a partial coat from the peritonæum, under which there are two layers of muscular fibres; they are thicker in their coats at the fundus than any other part, and appear there to be glandular. Their openings into the urethra are very large; and although they open close to the vasa deferentia, do not communicate with them. The septum between the two ducts is not continued on quite to the urethra, so that they cannot, in strict language, be said to enter that passage separately; but there is not length of common duct sufficient to admit of regurgitation from the vasa deferentia into these bags. They are not of the same size in the gelding and in the stone-horse, being largest in the last. Their contents in both are exactly similar, and nearly equal in quantity; but in no way resembling the semen emitted by the stone-horse in the coitus, or what is found in the vas deferens after death.

In the boar these bags are extremely large, and divided into cells of a considerable size; or they may more properly be said to form ramifications closely connected with one another, and having a large canal or duct common to the whole. The ducts contain a whitish fluid, very unlike what is found in the vasa deferentia of the same animal, with which they have not the least communication.

In the rat the bags are large and flat, with serrated edges, and lie some way within the abdomen, containing a thick ash coloured mucus, nearly of the consistence of soft cheese, very different from what is found in the vasa deferentia of the same animal, with which they do not communicate.

In the beaver the bags are convoluted; their ducts have no communication with the vasa deferentia; but both the one and the other open on the veru montanum.

In the Guinea-pig they are composed of long cylindrical tubes, and lie in the cavity of the belly; are smooth on their external surface, and do
not

not communicate with the vasa deferentia. They contain a thick bluish transparent substance which is softest near the fundus, and becomes firmer towards the openings into the urethra, where it is as solid as common cheese. From this circumstance, and what is observed in the horse, the fundus would appear to be the part which secretes this substance, which is very different in colour and consistence from the contents of the vasa deferentia, and is often found in broken pieces in the urethra.

To be more certain that the substance contained in these bags was not the secretion of the testicle, I extracted one of the testicles of a Guinea-pig; and six months afterwards gave it the female. As soon as the action of copulation was over, (in which all the parts containing semen should naturally have emptied themselves) I killed the animal, and upon examination found the vesicula of the perfect side, and that of the side from which the testicle had been removed, both filled with a substance in every respect similar. It will scarcely be alledged that this substance had been contained in the bag before the extirpation of the testicle; nor could it be semen, which must have been all thrown out in the previous connection with the female.

To ascertain that the contents of the vesiculæ are not discharged into the vagina of the female, with the semen in the act of emission, I killed a female Guinea-pig as soon as the male had left her, and examined with attention what was contained in the vagina and uterus; in neither could I find any of the mucus of the vesiculæ, which from its firmness must have been easily detected.

In the hedge-hog these bags are very large, being twice the size of the vesiculæ in the human subject.

Many animals have no such bags, and I believe they are wanting in the greater part of that class which live chiefly upon animal food: they are however to be found in some of them; and the hedge-hog is an example. There is no apparent difference in the testicles, vasa deferentia, or semen of the animals which have vesiculæ and of those which have none; and the mode of copulation, as far as these bags can be concerned, is very similar in both.

In birds, as far as I have yet observed, there is nothing analogous to these bags; and yet there appears to be no difference between the mode of copulation of the drake and the bull, or ram; and it is natural to suppose that if the vesiculæ were reservoirs of semen, they would be more necessary in birds; the power of repeating the act of copulation being in them infinitely greater than in quadrupeds: and indeed we find that in birds there are reservoirs which will account for this power; the *vafa deferentia* being enlarged just before they open into the rectum, probably to answer that intention. As birds have no urethra, but simply a groove, as the drake and gander; and many are even without a groove, as the common fowl, it was absolutely necessary there should be such a reservoir somewhere.

What I have observed of the reservoir of birds is equally applicable to amphibious animals and to that order of fish called rays.

From the above observations I think we may fairly conclude that these vesiculæ are not for the purpose of containing semen; the single circumstance of their ducts being united to those of the testicles in the human subject not appearing sufficient to set aside the many facts which are contradictory to such an opinion.

Having endeavoured to show that the use of these vesiculæ has hitherto been misunderstood, the following observations will tend to prove that they are subservient to generation, though their particular use is not yet discovered; and for the better understanding this part of the subject I shall premise the following facts.

Animals have their natural feelings raised or increased in proportion as the parts connected with such feelings are formed, and are in a state to act; and the disposition for action in these parts is also in proportion to their formation and the excitement of such feelings. But that these feelings may be duly excited, it is necessary that the animal and the parts should be healthy, in good condition, and in a certain degree of heat suitable to that class to which the animal belongs. As in most parts of the globe the seasons vary in their temperature; the cold in some of them is so considerable as to prevent those feelings or dispositions in animals from taking place; and in many situations the general influence
of

of the cold upon them is so great, as during its continuance to deprive them of these feelings and dispositions, and to render them, for the time, unfit for the purposes of generation.*

The testicle becomes at this season small, a fact very obvious in birds, of which the sparrow may be produced as a proof: for if a cock-sparrow is killed in the winter, before the days have begun to lengthen, the testicle will be found very small^b; but if that organ is examined at different times in other sparrows, as the warmth of the weather increases, and if this examination is continued to the breeding season, the difference in the size of the testicle will be very striking.^c This circumstance is not peculiar to birds, but is common, as far as I yet know, to all animals which have their seasons of copulation. In the buck we find the testicles are reduced to a very small size in the winter; but in the land-mouse, mole, &c. this diminution is still more remarkable. Those animals, on the contrary, who are not in a state of nature, have no such change take place in their testicles; and from not being much affected by seasons are consequently always in good condition, and in that state to which other animals that are left to themselves can only attain in the warmer season. Therefore in man, who is in the state we have described, the testicles are nearly of the same size in winter as in summer: and nearly, though not exactly, the same thing may be observed in the horse, ram, &c. these animals having their seasons in a given degree.

The variation above taken notice of is not confined to the testicles, but also extends to the parts which are connected with them. For in those animals that have their seasons for propagation, the most distinctly marked, as the land-mouse, mole, &c. the vesiculæ are hardly discernible in the winter; and in the spring are very large, varying in size in a manner similar to the testicle. It may however be alledged, that the change in these bags might naturally be supposed to take place, admitting them to be seminal reservoirs: but what happens to the prostate gland, which

* It is not required that the season for the copulation of different animals should be equally warm; for the frog copulates in very cold weather, while the snake and lizard, which are also cold, sleeping animals, do not copulate till the season is warm.

^b Vide plate III. fig. 1.

^c Vide plate III. fig. 5.

has

has never been supposed to contain semen, will take off the force of this objection; since in all the animals which have such a gland (and which have their season for propagation) it undergoes a similar change. In the mole the prostate gland in winter is hardly observable, but in the spring becomes very large and is filled with mucus.

From these observations it is reasonable to infer that the use of the vesiculæ in the animal œconomy, must in common, with many other parts, depend upon the testicles. For the penis, urethra, and all the parts connected with them are so far subservient to the testicles, that I am persuaded few of them would have existed if there had been no testicles in the original construction of the body; and these would have been so formed as merely to assist in the expulsion of the urine. To illustrate this opinion let us observe what is the difference between these parts in the perfect male, and in a male that has been deprived of the testicles when very young, at an age in which they have had no such influence upon the animal œconomy as to effect the growth of the other parts. In the perfect male the penis is large; the corpora cavernosa* being capable of dilatation. The corpus spongiosum is very vascular^b; and that part of the canal which is called the bulb is considerably enlarged, forming a cavity; the musculi acceleratores urinæ, as they are termed, are strong and healthy. In many animals which have long penises, they are continued forwards to the end of it; and in others they are not extended so far, but are very large.

On the contrary, in the castrated animal the penis is small and not capable of much dilatation; the corpus spongiosum is less vascular; the cavity at the bulb is little larger than the canal of the urethra; and the

* The cells of the corpora cavernosa are muscular, although no such appearance is to be observed in men: for the penis in erection is not at all times equally distended: the penis in a cold day is not so large in erection as in a warm one; which probably arises from a kind of spasm that could not act upon it if it were not muscular.

In the horse, the parts composing the cells of the penis appear evidently muscular to the eye; and in a horse just killed, they contract upon being stimulated.

^b It may not be improper to observe that the corpus spongiosum urethræ, and glans penis, are not spongy or cellular, but made up of a plexus of veins. This structure is discernible in the human subject; but much more distinctly seen in many animals, as the horse, &c.

muscles

muscles are white, small, and have a ligamentous appearance. The same observations are true if applied to the *erectores penis*.

The penis of the perfect male is of a sufficient length, when erected, to reach to the further end of the vagina of the female. In the castrated animal it is much shorter; and erections having then become unnecessary, the parts which should project, often adhere to the inside of the prepuce. The *erectores* muscles in the perfect male are strong enough to squeeze at once the blood out of the crura into the body of the penis, so as to straiten and contract the urethra instantaneously, and the *acceleratores urinæ** have sufficient power to throw out the semen that is gradually accumulated at the bulb for ejection.

The prostate gland^b, Cowper's glands, and the glands along the urethra, (of which the lacunæ are the excretory ducts) in the perfect male are large and pulpy, secreting a considerable quantity of a slimy mucus, which is salt to the taste, is most probably for the purpose of lubricating those parts, and is only thrown out when in vigour for copulation: while in the castrated animal they are small, flabby, tough and ligamentous, and have little secretion. From this account a considerable difference in appearance is distinguishable between the parts connected with generation of the perfect male, and those which remain in one that has been castrated;

* I shall call these muscles, *expulsores feminis*, as I apprehend their real use to be for the expulsion of that secretion: these muscles likewise throw out those drops of urine which are collected in the bulb from the last contractions of the bladder; and they have been from this circumstance named, *acceleratores urinæ*; but if a receptacle had not been necessary for the semen, those muscles had probably never existed, and the last drops of urine would have been thrown out by the action of the bladder and urethra, as in some measure is the case in the castrated animal. That the urethra has the power of contraction is evident upon the application of any stimulus; for I have seen the urethra refuse to allow an injection to pass on: and in that part where the injection stopped, a fulness was felt which terminated at once: this contraction is most probably in the internal membrane.

^b The prostate gland is not common to all animals. It is wanting in the bull, buck, and most probably I believe in all ruminating animals. In this class the coats of the vesiculæ are much thicker, and more glandular, than in those who have prostate glands; it is therefore natural to suppose that the vesiculæ answer nearly the same purposes as the prostate gland.

The prostate gland, and Cowper's glands, as well as the vesiculæ, are wanting in birds, in the amphibious animals, and in those fish which have testicles, as all of the ray kind.

more

more especially if that operation had been performed while the animal was young.

If it is objected that the same changes did not take place in the men from whom one testicle had been removed, it may be answered, that the operation was performed late in life; and one testicle being left, that was sufficient to carry on the necessary actions, and consequently the powers remained; therefore whatever parts had a connection with these powers would still have the stimulus of perfection given to them.

The difference of appearance of the bulb, and the muscles, would seem to point out, that in the perfect male the enlargement of the former is for the purpose of a receptacle for the semen; for although I have denied the vesiculæ to be reservoirs, yet as it was necessary that the semen should be accumulated somewhere before ejection, I shall endeavour to prove from the mode of copulation in the animals we are most acquainted with, that the bulb is intended for this purpose. Let us therefore give a short account of the different parts concerned in coition, and by observing the dependence which they have upon one another, see how this proof will come out.

The erection of the penis is produced by a stop being put to the returning blood; and this stoppage is so complete, that no mechanical pressure applied to the body of the penis, can force the blood on into the veins. This erection answers two purposes; it gives size and strength to the penis, and it renders the canal of the urethra smaller. The corpus spongiosum of the urethra, and the glans, which is only a continuation of it, are filled with blood from the same cause, but not so completely as the body of the penis; since from them it can be forced out into the veins by pressure.* This accumulation of blood in the corpus spongiosum diminishes

* In April 1760, in the presence of Mr. Blount, I laid bare the penis of a dog, almost through its whole length; traced the two veins that came from the glans, (which in this animal makes the largest part of the penis) and separated them from the arteries by dissection, that I might be able to compress them at pleasure without affecting the arteries. I then compressed the two veins, and found that the glans and large bulb became full and extended; but when I irritated the veins in order to see if there was any power of contraction in them which might occasionally stop the return of the blood, no such appearance could be observed.

the

the canal of the urethra so much, that any pressure upon one part of it will have a considerable effect upon the other; not only by lessening its capacity at the part pressed; but by forcing the blood forward, the parts beyond are still more distended, and consequently the canal of the urethra in that proportion diminished. The semen in the time of copulation, in such as remain long in that act, is gradually squeezed along the vasa deferentia (as it is secreted) into the bulb; and when the testicles cease to secrete, the paroxysm which is to finish the whole operation comes on, the semen acts as a stimulus to the cavity of the bulb of the urethra, the muscles of that part of the canal are thrown into action; the most distant fibres probably act first, and those more forward in quick succession; the semen is projected with some force; the blood in the bulb of the urethra is by the same action squeezed forward, but requiring a greater impulse to propel it, is rather later than the semen, on which it presses from behind; and the corpus spongiosum being full of blood, acts almost as quick as undulation, in which it is assisted by the corresponding constriction of the urethra, so that the semen is hurried along with a considerable velocity.

From the facts which I have stated respecting the organs of generation, the observations which I have made, and the series of actions which I have considered as taking place in the copulation of animals, I think the following inferences may be fairly drawn.

That the bags, called vesiculæ seminales, are not seminal reservoirs, but glands secreting a peculiar mucus; and that the bulb of the urethra is, properly speaking, the receptacle of the semen in which it is accumulated previous to ejection.

Although it seems to have been proved that the vesiculæ do not contain the semen, I have not been able to ascertain their particular use; we may however be allowed upon the whole to conclude that, they are together, with other parts, subservient to the purposes of generation.

P L A T E I.

SHOWS two testicles with the spermatic chords dissected; in the one the vas deferens, in the other a portion of the epididymis, is wanting.

FIG. 1. The right testicle and spermatic chord.

AA The body of the testicle.

BB The spermatic chord in which there is no appearance of vas deferens.

C The epididymis, where it takes its origin from the body of the testicle.

D The abrupt termination of the epididymis, it not being continued to the lower end of the testicle.

FIG. 2. The left testicle.

AA The body of the testicle.

B The blood-vessels of the testicle separated from the vas deferens.

C The origin of the epididymis.

D The termination of the epididymis; to show which the tunica vaginalis is removed.

E The origin of the vas deferens.

F The vas deferens, as it passes up towards the ring of the abdominal muscles.

THE

Plate I.

Fig I.

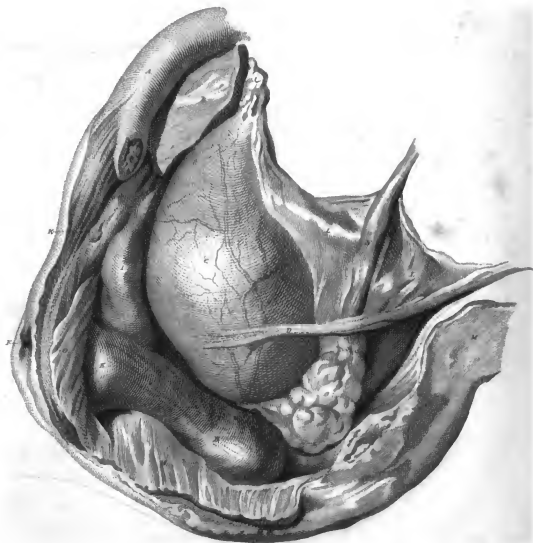


Fig II.



11.1.60

5



J. J. Krausdel del.

W. J. Jackson sculp.

THE EXPLANATION OF

P L A T E II.

A Side view of the pelvis, taken from the same subject as plate I, in which the vasa deferentia did not communicate with the vesiculæ, and the vesiculæ did not communicate with the urethra.

- A The body of the penis.
- B The symphysis of the pubis.
- C The bladder.
- D The left ureter.
- E E The rectum.
- F The anus.
- G The sphincter muscle of the anus, turned aside.
- H The levator muscle of the anus, turned down.
- I The prostate gland.
- K The Cowper's gland of the left-side.
- L The peritoneum, which lined the left side of the pelvis.
- M The sacrum, where it is articulated with the os ileum.
- N The left vas deferens.
- O The vesiculæ.

PLATE

6.1

Plate III.

p. 41

 1 January 2 Middle of February 3 Beginning of March 4 End of March 5 Middle of April

THE nine following papers have been read at the Royal Society, and published in the Philosophical Transactions; but in a work of so general a nature, and of which physiological inquiries make so small a part, the few facts and observations which I have given upon such subjects may probably be overlooked by those who are not members of that society. That they may be more easily procured by students in medicine, and other readers, I have, by an application to the President and Council of the Royal Society, obtained leave to reprint such of them as I consider to be connected with the principles and actions of the animal œconomy; and I have added such observations and remarks as have occurred to me since the time they were read before the Royal Society.

ACCOUNT OF THE FREE MARTIN.

GENERATION, when produced from a seed, has two causes which concur towards its perfection; the one which forms the seed, the other which gives it the principle of action.*

The cause which forms the seed is called the female, the other cause is called the male; but those two causes in general make only a part of a whole animal, or are rather parts superadded to an animal. Probably they were first considered in animals where those parts were separated, or in which the female parts were found complete in one animal and the male in the other; therefore the terms female and male have been applied to the whole animal, dividing them into two distinct sexes, and the parts which formed either the one sex or the other were called either the female or the male parts of generation; but upon a more perfect knowledge of animals, and of those parts, they were found in many of the inferior tribes to be united in the same animal, which, from possessing both parts, has got the name of hermaphrodite.

As both male and female parts are natural to most animals, as the union of them in the same animal is also natural to many, and as the separation of them in distinct animals is only a circumstance making no

* It may be necessary for some of my readers to have explained to them what I mean by a seed. I do suppose that the word seed was first applied to grain, or that which is always called seed in the vegetable; which seed is the part of that class of vegetables in which the matter of the young vegetable exists, or is formed. The principle of arrangement in the farina, or male part, fitting the seed for action, being at first not known, a false analogy between the vegetable and animal was established, and the matter secreted by the testes was called the seed: but from the knowledge of the distinct sexes in the vegetable, it is well known that the seed is the female production in them, and that the principle of arrangement for action is from the male. The same operation and principles takes place in many orders of animals, viz. the female produces a seed in which is the matter fitted for the first arrangement of the organs of the animal, and which receives the principle of arrangement fitting them for action from the male.

essential

essential difference in the parts themselves, it becomes no great effort or uncommon play in nature to unite them in those animals in which they are commonly separated.

And accordingly we find many of those orders of animals, which naturally have them separate, have them sometimes united.

From this account hermaphrodites may be divided into two kinds, the natural and the unnatural.

The natural hermaphrodite belongs to the inferior and more simple genera of animals, of which there are a much greater number than of the more perfect; but as animals become more complicated, have more parts, and each part is more confined to its particular use, a separation of the two necessary powers for generation have also taken place.

The unnatural hermaphrodite, I believe, now and then occurs in every tribe of animals having distinct sexes, and is to be met with in all its gradations, from the distinct sex to the complete union of the male and female organs, but is more common in some than in others.* I fancy it is most rarely to be met with in the human species, never having seen an instance. I can say the same of dogs and cats, with which last however I am less acquainted; but in the horse, ass, sheep, and black cattle, it is very frequent.

There is one part common to both the male and female organs of generation in all animals which have the sexes distinct; in the one sex it is called the penis, in the other the clitoris; its specific use in both is to continue, by its sensibility, the action excited in coition till the paroxysm alters the sensation. In the female it probably answers no other purpose; but in the male it is more complicated to adapt it for the purpose of expelling and conducting the semen that has been secreted in consequence of the actions so excited.

Though the unnatural hermaphrodite be a mixture of both sexes, and may possess the parts peculiar to each in perfection, yet it can not possess in perfection that part which is common to both. For as this common

* *Quere*: Is there ever in the genera of animals, that are natural hermaphrodites, a separation of the two parts forming distinct sexes? If there is, it may account for the distinction of sexes ever having happened.

part is different in one sex from what it is in the other, and it is impossible for one animal to have both a penis and clitoris; the part which they have must of course partake of both sexes, and consequently render the hermaphrodite so far imperfect. But those parts which are peculiar to each sex, may be perfectly joined in the same animal, which will come up to the idea of the truest hermaphrodite; although it may not be necessary that the parts peculiar to the one sex should be blended with those of the other, in the same way that the penis is with the clitoris; yet this sometimes happens in parts whose uses are equally similar, as the testicle and ovarium, forming one body with the properties of neither; which as it approaches nearer to the testicle or ovarium, will make the animal partake more of the one sex than the other; and some of them, from the sameness of their situation in the two sexes, in many animals may interfere with one another.

The parts in the female appropriated for the purpose of supplying the young with nourishment are variously placed in different animals. In the horse, black cattle, sheep, and other granivorous animals, their situation is between the hind legs, which is also the place allotted for the testicles of the male of this tribe; (and probably of all those in which they come out of the cavity of the belly) therefore in the hermaphrodite which has both these parts, the testicles are in some degree obliged to come down into the udder, which does not receive them so readily as the scrotum.

The hermaphrodites, which I have seen, have always appeared externally, and, at first view, to be females: this arises from the penis being the part principally deficient, and there being an opening behind like the bearing in the female; and as the testicles in such hermaphrodites seldom come down, the udder is left to occupy its proper place. In those animals where the female is preserved for breeding only, as in sheep, goats, pigs, &c. they are generally kept, from their being supposed to be females.

Among horses they are very frequent: I have seen several, but never dissected any. The most complete was one in which the testicles had come down out of the abdomen into the place where the udder should have been, (*viz.* more forward than the scrotum) and had the appearance of an udder, not being so pendulous as the scrotum in the perfect male of such

such animals. There were also two nipples, of which the male have no perfect form, being blended in them with the sheath or prepuce, of which there was none here. The external female parts were exactly similar to those of the perfect female; but instead of a common-sized clitoris, there was one about five or six inches long, which, when erect, stood almost directly backwards.

I procured a foal ass, very similar in external appearance to the horse, and killed it, to examine the parts. It had two nipples, but the testicles were not come down as in the above; owing perhaps to the animal's being yet too young.

There was no penis passing round the pubis to the belly as in the perfect male ass.

The external female parts were similar to those of the she-ass. Within the entrance of the vagina was placed the clitoris, but much longer than that of a true female, its length being about five inches. The vagina was pervious a little further than the opening of the urethra into it, and there it was obliterated; from thence up to the fundus of the uterus there was no canal. The common uterus was hollow at the fundus, or had a cavity in it, and then divided into two horns, which were also pervious. Beyond the termination of the two horns were placed the ovaria as in the true female, but I could not find the Fallopian tubes. From the broad ligaments to the edges of which the horns of the uterus and ovaria were attached, there passed towards each groin a part similar to the round ligament in the female, which were continued into the rings of the abdominal muscles; but with this difference, that there was continued with them a process or theca of the peritonæum, similar to the tunica vaginalis communis in the male ass, and in these thecæ were found the testicles; but I could not observe any vasa deferentia passing from them.

Here then were found in the same animal the parts peculiar to each sex (although very imperfect) and that part which is common to both, but different in each, was a kind of medium of that difference.

Something similar to the above I have seen in sheep, goats, &c. but I shall not at present trouble the reader with a description of hermaphrodites

dites in general, as it is a very extensive subject, admitting of great variety, which would make them appear a production of chance, whereas the intention of this account is to point out a circumstance which takes place in the production of hermaphrodites in black cattle, which appears to be almost an established principle in the economy of propagation of that species of animal, and perhaps peculiar to them.

It is a fact known, and I believe almost universally understood, that when a cow brings forth two calves, and one of them a bull-calf, and the other to appearance a cow, that the cow-calf is unfit for propagation; but the bull-calf becomes a very proper bull. This cow-calf is called in this country a *free martin*; and is just as well known among the farmers as either cow or bull. Although it will appear from the description of this animal, that it is an hermaphrodite, being in no respect different from other hermaphrodites, yet I shall retain the term free martin, to distinguish the hermaphrodite produced in this way, from those which resemble the hermaphrodite of other animals: for I have reason to believe that in black cattle, such a deviation may be produced without the circumstance of twins; and even when there are twins, the one a male the other a female, they may both have the organs of generation perfectly formed. But when I speak of those which are not twins, I shall call them hermaphrodites; the only circumstance worth our notice being a singularity in the mode of production of the free martin, and its being, as far as I yet know, peculiar to black cattle.

This calf has all the external marks of a cow-calf similar to what was mentioned in the unnatural hermaphrodite, viz. the teats and the external female parts, called by farmers the bearing.

When they are preserved it is not for propagation, but for all the purposes of an ox or spayed heifer, viz. to yoke with the oxen, and to fatten for the table.^a

They are known not to breed: they do not show the least inclination for the bull, nor does the bull ever take the least notice of them.^b

^a I need hardly observe here, that if a cow has twins, and they are both bull-calves, that they are in every respect perfect bulls; or if they are both cow-calves, they are perfect cows.

^b Vide Leslie on Husbandry, p. 98, 99.

They very much resemble in form the ox or spayed heifer, being considerably larger than either the bull or the cow, the horns being very similar to the horns of an ox.

The bellow of the free martin is similar to that of an ox, having more resemblance to that of the cow than of the bull. Free martins are very susceptible of growing fat with good food. The flesh, like that of the ox or spayed heifer, is in common much finer in the fibre than either the bull or cow; and is supposed to exceed that of the ox and heifer in delicacy of flavour, and bears a higher price at market.

However, it seems that this is not universal; for I was lately informed by Charles Palmer, Esq. of Luckley in Berkshire, that there was a free martin killed in his neighbourhood, and from the general idea of its being better meat than common, every neighbour bespoke a piece, which turned out nearly as bad as bull-beef, at least worse than that of a cow. It is probable that circumstance might arise from this animal having more the properties of the bull than the cow, as we shall see hereafter that they are sometimes more the one than the other.^a Although what I have said with respect to the productions of free martins is in general true, yet I was lately furnished with an instance, by the assistance of Benjamin Way, Esq. of Denham, near Uxbridge, who knew that I was anxious to ascertain this point, that it does not invariably hold good.

One of his cows having produced twins, which were to appearance male and female, upon a supposition that the cow-calf was a free martin, he obligingly offered either to give it me, or to keep it till it grew up, that we might determine the fact: as I conceived it to be a free martin, and was to have the liberty of examining it after death, I desired that he would keep it; but unfortunately it died about a month old. Upon examining the organs of generation, they appeared to be those of the

^a The Romans called the bull *taurus*: they however talked of *tauræ* in the feminine gender. And Stephen observes, that it was thought the Romans meant by *tauræ*, barren cows, and called them by this name because they did not conceive. He also quotes a passage from Columella, lib. vi. cap. 22. "and like the *tauræ*, which occupy the place of fertile cows, should be rejected, or sent away." He likewise quotes Varro, *De re Rustica*, lib. ii. cap. 5. "The cow which is barren, is called *taura*." From which we may reasonably conjecture that the Romans had not the idea of the circumstances of their production,

female,

female, and perfectly formed; but to make this more certain, I procured those parts of a common cow-calf, and compared them together, and found them exactly alike. This made us regret that the animal had not lived long enough for us to see if it would breed; for the construction of the parts being to appearance perfect, is not sufficient of itself to stamp it a true or perfect female; for I can suppose that the parts being perfectly formed, but without the power of propagation, may constitute the most simple kind of hermaphrodite. It is however most probable that this was a perfect female, which is an exception to the common rule; and if there are such deviations as twins being perfect male and female, why not suppose, on the other hand, that an hermaphrodite may be produced singly, as in other animals; and I am the more inclined to this opinion, from finding a number of hermaphrodites among black cattle, without the circumstances of their birth being ascertained.

Hermaphrodites are to be met with in sheep; but from the account given of them, I should suppose that they are not free martins. I have seen several of them which appeared to be imperfect males, having the penis terminating in the perinæum; the orifice of which appeared like the bearing in the female. They are not naturally stimulated to put themselves in the position of the female when they void their water, so that when they pass it they wet all the surrounding parts, which being covered with wool, retains the urine, keeps them continually wet, and gives them a strong smell. They are mentioned as both male and female, which is not reconcileable to the account given of the free martin.

I believe it had never been even conjectured, notwithstanding all those peculiarities, what was the true nature of the free martin.

From the singularity of the animal, and the account of its production, I was almost ready to suppose the whole a vulgar error; yet from the universality of the testimony in its favour, it appeared to have some foundation; and therefore I eagerly sought for an opportunity to see and examine one. Since when I have succeeded in this inquiry, and have seen several; the first of which was one belonging to John Arbuthnot, Esq. of Mitcham, which was calved in his own farm. He was so obliging as to allow me to satisfy myself, by permitting me first to have a drawing made of the

animal while alive, which was executed by Mr. Gilpin; and after death to examine the parts. When the drawing was made of Mr. Arbuthnot's free martin, John Wells, Esq. of Bickley Farm, near Bromley in Kent, was present, and informed us, that a cow of his had calved two calves, one of which was a bull-calf and the other a cow-calf. I desired Mr. Arbuthnot to speak to Mr. Wells to keep them, or let me buy them of him; but from his great desire for natural knowledge he very readily preserved both till the bull shewed all the signs of a good bull; and when the free martin was killed he allowed me to inspect the parts.

Of all the free martins which I have dissected, I shall only give the descriptions of three, which point out most distinctly the complete free martin, with the gradations towards the male and female.

THE DESCRIPTION OF THE THREE FREE MARTINS.

MR. ARBUTHNOT'S FREE MARTIN.*

THE external parts were rather smaller than in the cow. The vagina passed on, as in the cow, to the opening of the urethra, and then it began to contract into a small canal, which passed on to the division of the uterus into the two horns, each horn passed along the edge of the broad ligament laterally towards the ovaria.

At the termination of those horns were placed both the ovaria and the testicles; both were nearly of the same size, which was about as large as a small nutmeg.

To the ovaria I could not find any Fallopian tube.

To the testicles were vasa deferentia, but they were imperfect. The left one did not come near the testicle; the right only came close to it, but did not terminate in a body called the epididymis. They were both pervious, and opened into the vagina near the opening of the urethra.

* This animal was seven years old, had been often yoked with the oxen; at other times went with the cows and bull, but never shewed any desires for either the one or the other.

On

On the posterior surface of the bladder, or between the uterus and bladder, were the two bags called *vesiculæ seminales* in the male, but much smaller than what they are in the bull: the ducts opened along with the *vasa deferentia*. This was more deserving the name of hermaphrodite than the two following; for it had a mixture of all the parts, although all were imperfect.

MR. WRIGHT'S FREE MARTIN, FIVE YEARS OLD.

THIS animal had more the appearance and general character of the ox, or spayed heifer, than either the bull or cow. The vagina terminated in a blind end, a little way beyond the opening of the urethra, from which the vagina and uterus were impervious. The uterus at its extreme part divided into two horns. At the termination of the horns were placed the testicles instead of the ovaria, as is the case in the female. The reasons why I call those bodies testicles, are the following. First, they were more than twenty times larger than the ovaria of the cow, and nearly the size of the testicles of the bull, particularly those of the ridgill, or bull whose testicles never come down. Secondly, the spermatic arteries were similar to those of the bull, especially of the ridgill. Thirdly, the cremaster muscle passed up from the rings of the abdominal muscles to the testicles, as it does in the ridgill.*

There were the two bags placed behind the bladder, between it and the uterus. Their ducts opened into the vagina, a very little way beyond the opening of the urethra; but there was nothing similar to the *vasa deferentia*.

As the external parts had more of the cow than the bull, the clitoris, which may be reckoned an external part, was also similar to that of the

* Although I call these bodies testicles for the reason given, yet they were only imitations of such; for when cut into they had nothing of the structure of the testicle: not being similar to any thing in nature, they had more the appearance of disease. From the seeming imperfection of the animal itself, it was not to be supposed that they should be testicles, for then the animal should have partaken of the bull, which it certainly did not.

COW;

cow; not at all in a middle state between the penis of the bull and the clitoris of the cow, as I have described in the hermaphrodite horse. There were four teats; the glandular part of the udder was but small.

This animal cannot be said to have been a mixture of all the parts of both sexes, for the clitoris had nothing similar to the penis in the male, and was different in the cow part, in having nothing similar to the ovaria; nor was the uterus a cavity.

MR. WELL'S FREE MARTIN.

THIS animal was never seen to show any signs of a desire for the male, although it went constantly with one. It looked more like an heifer than what they commonly do; but as it was only between three and four years old when killed, it is very probable that it was not sufficiently old to have taken the characters of the ox; however this may be owing to another circumstance that will be mentioned hereafter.

The teats and udder were small compared with those of an heifer, but rather larger than in either of the former; the beginning of the vagina was similar to that of the cow, but soon obliterated beyond the opening of the urethra, as in the last described. The vagina and uterus to external appearance was continued, although not pervious; and the uterine part divided into two horns, at the end of which were the ovaria.

I could not observe in this any other body which I could suppose to be the testicle.

There was on the side of the uterus an interrupted vas deferens broken off in several places.

Behind the bladder, or between it and the vagina, were the bags called vesiculæ seminales; between which were the terminations of the two vasa deferentia.

The ducts of the bags and the vasa deferentia opened as in the former.

This could not be called an exact mixture of all the parts of both sexes, for here was no appearance of testicles.

The

The female parts were imperfect, and there was the addition of part of the *vasa deferentia*, and the bags called *vesiculæ feminales*.

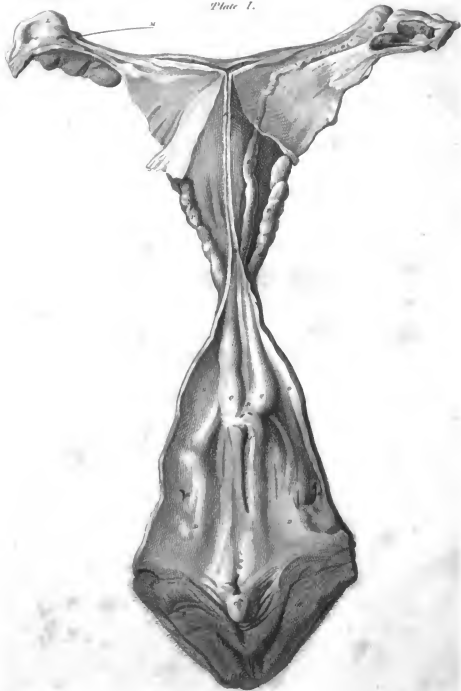
This circumstance of having no testicles, perhaps was the reason why it had more the external appearance of an heifer than what they commonly have, and more than either of the two former.

PLATE

11.1.00

56A

Plate 1.



H. B. del.

H. B. sculp.

P L A T E I.

THIS plate shows the organs of generation of Mr. Arbuthnot's free martin, which are almost a complete mixture of the male and female; with this structure of the parts the external appearances and general character of the animal corresponded, it being neither that of the bull nor cow, but a mixt character.

A The peak of the labia.

B B The two labia.

C The glans clitoridis.

D D The inside of the common vagina.

E E Orifices of the ducts of two glands.

F The orifice of the meatus urinarius.

G G The true vagina.

H H Either the contracted vagina, or what may be called uterus.

I I The horns of ditto, only pervious a little way.

K The right ovarium deprived of its capsula.

L The left ovarium inclosed in its capsula.

M A bristle introduced through the orifice into the capsula.

N The right testicle.

O O O O The right vas deferens.

P P The vesiculæ feminales.

Q Q The ducts of vesiculæ feminales seen through the vagina.

R Points to the openings of the vasa deferentia and vesiculæ feminales.



P L A T E II.

THIS plate represents the organs of generation of Mr. Wright's free martin, which are more the parts of a bull than those of a cow; and the animal while alive had a good deal the character and look of an ox.

A The peak of the labia.

BB The labia.

C The glans clitoridis.

DDDD The inner surface of the common vagina.

EE The orifices of the ducts of two glands

F Meatus urinarius.

GG The inner surface of the true vagina, terminating in a blind end at H.

H The termination of the vagina in a blind end.

IIII What may be called uterus, but impervious.

KK What may be called horns of the uterus.

LL The testicles.

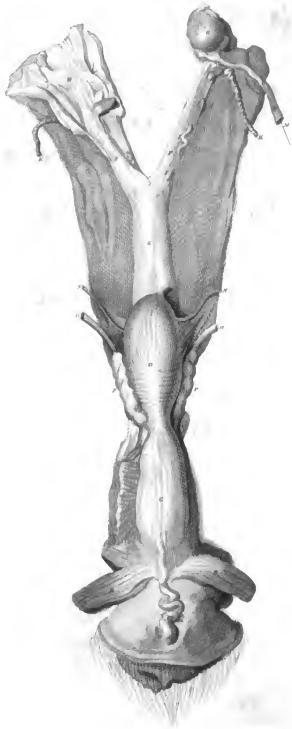
MM The spermatic vessels.

NN The cremaster muscles.

OO The vesiculæ feminales.

PP The ducts of the vesiculæ feminales seen through the vagina.

Q Points to the ducts of ditto, into which are introduced bristles.



P L A T E III.

THIS plate exhibits a front view of the organs of generation of Mr. Wells's free martin, which are more the parts of a cow than of a bull, and the animal itself resembled a young heifer very much in its appearance.

A The clitoris.

BB The crura clitoridis.

C The urethra.

D The bladder.

E The body of the uterus beyond the bladder, which is impervious.

FF The horns of ditto, which are also impervious.

G The left ovarium deprived of its capsula.

H The right capsula inclosing its ovarium.

IIII Interrupted parts of the vasa deferentia.

KK The spermatic vessels.

L The gubernaculum of the right side.

M The beginning of the tunica vaginalis communis, into which is introduced a bristle to show that it is hollow.

NN Vessels going behind the bladder.

OO The two ureters.

PP The vesiculæ seminales.

ACCOUNT

ACCOUNT OF AN EXTRAORDINARY PHEASANT.

EVERY deviation from that original form and structure which gives the distinguishing character to the productions of nature, may not improperly be called monstrous. According to this acceptation of the term, the variety of monsters will be found to be infinite. As far as my knowledge has extended, there is not a species of animals, nay there is not a single part of an animal body which is not subject to extraordinary formation. Nor does this appear to be a matter of mere chance; for it may be observed, that every one has a disposition to deviate from nature in a manner peculiar to itself. It is likewise worthy of remark, that each species of animals is disposed to have supernumerary parts of the same kinds, and nearly the same sort of defects; but every part is not perhaps subject to a great variety of forms, each part of each species having its monstrous form, as it were, originally impressed on it by the hand of nature.

It is well known, that there are many orders of animals which have the two parts designed for the purpose of generation different in the same species, by which they are distinguished into male and female: but this is not the only mark of distinction in many genera of animals; in the greatest part the male being distinguished from the female by various marks. The differences which are found in the parts of generation themselves, I shall call the first, or principle; and all others depending upon these I shall call secondary. The first belong equally to both; but the secondary will be found principally, although not entirely, in the male.

One of the most general marks is the superior strength of male in the male; and another circumstance, perhaps equally so, is this strength being directed to one part more than to another, which part is that most immediately employed in fighting. This difference in external form is more particularly striking in the animals whose females are of a peaceable nature;

nature ; such are the greatest number of those which feed on vegetables, and the marks to discriminate the sexes are in them very numerous. As the males of almost every class of animals are probably disposed to fight, they are, as I have observed, stronger than the females. In many there are parts solely destined for that purpose, as the spurs in the cock, and the horns in the bull ; on which account the strength of the bull lies principally in his neck, that of the cock in his limbs.

In carnivorous animals, whose prey is often of a kind which it requires strength to kill, we do not find such a difference in the form of the male and female ; very little being discernable in that of the dog and bitch ; in the he or she cat ; or in the cock and hen of the eagle ; a difference however is often perceivable in the whole or in some part of their external covering ; the mane of the lion, for instance, distinguishing him from the lioness : and the males of such animals as neither fight nor feed on flesh, are distinguishable from the female merely by some peculiarity in the covering of their bodies, as the cock and hen in many birds. The male of the human species is distinguished from the female, both by his general strength and his covering, as also by a difference of voice.

In those orders of animals where the sexes are distinct, we may not only observe the genital organs to be subject to a mal-conformation, similar to a mal-conformation in any other part of the animal ; but that an attempt is sometimes made to unite the two parts in one animal body, producing an animal called an unnatural hermaphrodite.

It is my intention at present to extend my inquiry on this subject no further than to what relates to the resemblance which one sex bears to another in those distinguishing properties which I term secondary.

The unnatural hermaphrodites appear to be governed by the same certain laws by which such extraordinary formation of parts is effected ; for it is observable, that these deviations obtain through a whole species of animals precisely in the same manner. I have already given an account of the free martin, which exhibits a mixture of the two parts of generation in the same animal.

We find however, that there is often a change of the secondary properties of one sex into those of another ; the female in such respects now
and

and then assuming the peculiarities of the male ; and it may be observed, that some classes are more liable than others to this change ; a singular example of which is to be the subject of the following pages.

I here beg leave to premise, that in animals just born, or very young, there are no peculiarities of shape to distinguish one sex from the other, exclusive of what relates to the organs of generation, and that towards the age of maturity the discriminating changes before mentioned appear ; the male then losing that resemblance he had to the female in various secondary properties.* But that in all animals which are not of any distinct sex, called hermaphrodites, there is no such alteration taking place in their form when they arrive at the age of maturity. It is evidently the male which at this time in such respects recedes from the female. Every female being at the age of maturity more like the young of the same species than the male is observed to be ; and if the male is deprived of his testes when young, he retains more of the original youthful form, and is therefore more similar to the female.

From hence it might be supposed, that the female character contains more truly the specific properties of the animal than the male ; but the character of every animal is that which is marked by the properties common to both sexes, which are found in a natural hermaphrodite, as a snail, or an animal of neither sex, as the castrated male or spayed female.

But where the sexes are separate, and the animals have two characters, neither of them can be called the true one ; the true distinguishing properties being those peculiar to neither sex, as above mentioned, which are likewise found in the monstrous hermaphrodite. That these properties give the distinct character of such animals is evident, for the castrated male and the spayed female have both the same common properties ; and when I treated of the free martin, which is a monstrous hermaphrodite, I observed that it was more like the ox than the cow or bull, so that the marks characteristic of the species which are found in the animal of a

* This is not common to all animals of distinct sexes ; for in the fish there is no great difference, nor in many insects, nor in dogs, as has been already observed ; however, it is considerable in many quadrupeds, but appears to be most so in birds.

double sex, are imitated by depriving the individual animal of its sex by art, by which means it only preserves the true properties of the species.

In some animals which have the secondary properties we have mentioned peculiar to the two sexes, there is a deviation from all those general rules, by a change of these secondary characters; the female perfect with respect to the parts of generation, assuming more or less of the secondary character of the male.

This however does not appear to arise from any action which takes place at the first formation of the animal, or grows up with it, but seems to be one of those which is produced at certain periods of life, similar to many common and natural phenomena; like to what is observed of the horns of the stag, which differ at different ages; or to the mane of the lion, which does not grow till after his fifth year, &c.

This change has been observed in some of the bird tribe, but principally in the common pheasant.

It is remarked by those who are conversant with this bird, when wild, that there appears every now and then a hen pheasant with the feathers of the cock; and all that they have decided on the subject is, that this animal does not breed; and that its spurs do not grow. Some years ago one of these was sent to the late Dr. William Hunter, which I examined and found it to have all the parts of the female peculiar to that bird. This specimen is still preserved in Dr. Hunter's museum.

Dr. Pitcairn having received a pheasant of this kind from Sir Thomas Harris, showed it as a curiosity to Sir Joseph Banks and Dr. Solander. I happened to be then present, and was desired to examine the bird. The following was the result of my examination.

I found the parts of generation to be truly female: they were as perfect as in any hen pheasant that is not in the least prepared for laying eggs. There were both the ovaria and oviduct.

As the observations hitherto made have been principally upon birds found wild, little of their history can be known; but from what took place in a hen pheasant in the possession of a friend of Sir Joseph Banks, it should seem probable that this character arises from a change at a late period of the animal's life, and does not grow up with it from the beginning

ginning. This lady had for some time bred pheasants, and paid particular attention to them. One of the hens, after having produced several broods, moulted, and the succeeding feathers were those of a cock. This animal was never afterwards impregnated. Hence it is most probable, that all those hen pheasants which are found wild, and have the feathers of a cock, were formerly perfect hens, but have become changed by age, and perhaps by certain constitutional circumstances.

I having bought some pheasants from a dealer in birds, among which were several hens, perceived that one of the hens, the year after, did not lay, and began to change her feathers; the year following she had nearly those of the cock, but less brilliant, especially on the head. It is more than probable this was an old hen, nearly under similar circumstances to those before described.

Lady Tynte had a favourite pyed pea-hen which had produced chickens eight several times; having moulted when about eleven years old, the lady and family were astonished by her displaying the feathers peculiar to the other sex, and appearing like a pyed peacock. In this process the tail, which became like that of a cock, appeared first after moulting. In the following year she moulted again, and produced similar feathers. In the third year she did the same; then had spurs resembling those of a cock. She never bred after this change in her plumage, and died in the following winter during the hard frost, namely, in the winter 1775-6. This bird is now preserved in the museum of Sir Ashton Lever.*

From what has been related of these three birds, may it not reasonably be inferred, that all those wild pheasants of the female sex, which are found resembling the cock, have changed the nature of their feathers at a certain age? This not only obtains in the birds above mentioned, but perhaps to a certain degree in every class of animals. We find some-

* It might be supposed, that this bird was really a cock which had been changed for a hen; but the following facts put this matter beyond a doubt. First, there was no other pyed pea-fowl in the country. Secondly, the hen had knobs on her toes, which were the same after her change. Thirdly, she was as small after the change as before, therefore too small for a cock. Fourthly, she was a favourite bird, and was generally fed by the lady, and used to come for her food, which she still continued to do after the change in the feathers.

thing similar taking place even in the human species: for that increase of hair observable on the faces of many women in advanced life, is an approach towards the beard, which is one of the most distinguishing secondary properties of man.

Thus we see the sexes which at an early period had little to distinguish them from each other, acquiring about the time of puberty secondary properties, which clearly characterise the male and female. The male at this time recedes from the female, and assumes the secondary properties of his sex.

The female, at a much later time of life, when the powers of propagation cease, loses many of her peculiar properties; and may be said, except from mere structure of parts, to be of no sex; and even recedes from the original character of the animal, approaching in appearance towards the male, or perhaps more properly towards the hermaphrodite.

ACCOUNT OF THE ORGAN OF HEARING IN FISHES.

NATURAL history has ever been considered as worthy the attention of the curious philosopher, and therefore has in all ages kept pace with the other branches of knowledge; and as both arts and sciences have of late years been cultivated to a degree perhaps beyond what was ever known before, we find also that natural history has not been neglected; all Europe appears to be awake to it. In this island it has been pursued with more philosophic ardour than what was ever known in any country. It has become the study of men possessed of affluent fortune, which they have not only dedicated to the cultivation of this science, but have even risked their health and lives in pursuit of it, searching unknown regions to improve mankind, settling correspondences every where, so as to bring in its materials into this country in order to make it the school of natural history. It is no wonder then that a spirit of inquiry is diffused through almost all ranks of men; and that those who cannot pursue it themselves, yet chusing at least to benefit by the industry of others, are eager to be informed of what is already known.

These reflections induced me to publish this short account of the Organ of Hearing in Fishes; for though the existence of such an organ is now more known, it is still a subject of dispute with many, whether they possess that sense or not.

Some time before I quitted my anatomical pursuits in the year 1760, and went with the army to Bellisle, I had observed this organ in fishes, and had the parts exposed and preserved in spirits. In some the canals were filled with coloured injection, which showed them to great advantage; and in others were so prepared as to fit them to be kept as dried preparations.* My researches, in that and in every other part of the animal

* I have injected these parts in other animals, both with wax and metals, and the bone being afterwards corroded in spirit of sea-salt makes elegant casts of these canals.

œconomy, have been continued ever since that time; yet I am still inclined to consider whatever is uncommon in the structure of these parts in fishes, as only a link in the chain of varieties displayed in the formation of this organ of sense, in different animals, descending from the most perfect to the most imperfect, in a regular progression.*

As in this age of investigation, a hint that such an organ existed would be sufficient to excite a spirit of conjecture or inquiry, I was aware that there would not be wanting some men, who, whether they only imagined the fact to be true, or really found it to be so, would be very ready to believe the discovery their own, and to assume all the merit of it to themselves. My attention was more strongly recalled to this point, by hearing in conversation that some anatomists in France, Germany, and Italy, had discovered the organ of hearing in fishes, and intended to publish on the subject. I therefore conceived that it would be only justice to myself to deliver a short account of that organ to the Royal Society, of which I had made a discovery more than twenty years before. I have thought it proper to reprint it here, without adding any thing to what I had before written on the subject; reserving a more compleat investigation of this part of natural history for a larger work on the the structure of animals, which I one day hope to have it in my power to publish.

I do not intend to give a full account of this organ in any one fish, or of the varieties in different fishes, but only of the organ in general; those therefore who may chuse to pursue this branch of the animal œconomy may think it deficient in the descriptive parts. If it was a difficult task to expose this organ in fishes, I should perhaps be led to be more full in my description of it; but there is in fact nothing more easy.

I may be allowed just to observe here, that the class called *sepia* has the organ of hearing, but somewhat differently constructed from what it is in fishes.

* The preparations to illustrate these facts have been ever since shewn in my collection to both the curious of this country and foreigners: in shewing whatever was new, or supposed to be new, the ears of fishes were always considered by me as one important article.

The organ of hearing in fishes is placed on the sides of the skull, or cavity which contains the brain; but the skull makes no part of the organ, as it does in the quadruped and the bird, the organ itself being a distinct and detached part. In some fishes the organ is wholly surrounded by the parts composing the cavity of the skull, as in the ray kind.

In others this organ is in part within the skull, or that cavity which contains the brain, as in the salmon, cod, &c. the skull projecting laterally, and forming a cavity.

The organ of hearing in fishes appears to increase with the animal, for it is nearly in the same proportion with that of the animal; which is not the case with the quadruped, &c. the organs being in them nearly as large in the growing fetus as in the adult.

It is much more simple in fishes than in all those orders of animals which may be reckoned superior, such as quadrupeds, birds, and amphibious animals; but there is a regular gradation from the first of these to fishes.

It varies in different orders of fishes; but in all it consists of three curved tubes which unite with one another; this union forms in some only one canal, as in the cod, salmon, ling, &c. and in others a pretty large cavity, as in the ray kind. In the jack there is an oblong bag, or blind process, which is an addition to those canals, and which communicates with them at their union. In the cod, &c. this union of the three tubes stands upon an oval cavity, and in the jack there are two; the additional cavities in these fishes appear to answer the same purpose with the cavity in the ray or cartilaginous fishes, which is the union of the three canals.

The whole organ is composed of a kind of cartilaginous substance, very hard or firm in some parts, and which in some fishes is crusted over with a thin bony lamella, so as not to allow it to collapse; for as the skull does not form any part of those canals or cavities, they must be composed of a substance capable of keeping its form.

Each

Each tube describes more than a semi-circle. This resembles in some respect what we find in most other animals, but differs in the parts being distinct from the skull.*

Two of the semi-circular canals are similar to one another, may be called a pair, and are placed perpendicularly; the third is not so long; in some it is placed horizontally, uniting as it were the other two at their ends or terminations. In the skate this is somewhat different, being only united to one of the perpendicular canals. The two semi-circular canals whose position is perpendicular, are united at one end laterally, forming one canal; at their other extremities they have no connection with each other, but are joined to the terminations of the horizontal one, near its entrance into the common cavity. Near the union of those canals into the common, they are swelled out into round bags, becoming there much larger.

In the ray kind they all terminate in one cavity; and in the cod they terminate in one canal, placed upon the additional cavity or cavities, in which there is a bone or bones. In some there are two bones; and in the jack, which has two cavities, we find in one of them two bones, and in the other one; in the ray there is only a chalky substance.^b

In some fishes the external communication, or meatus, enters at the union of the two perpendicular canals. This is the case with all the ray kind, the external orifice being small, and placed on the upper flat surface of the head; but it is not every genus or species of fishes that have the external opening.

The nerves of the ear pass outwards from the brain, and appear to terminate at once on the external surface of the swelling of the semi-circular tubes above described. They do not appear to pass through these so as to get on the inside, as is supposed to be the case in quadrupeds; I should therefore very much suspect, that the lining of the tubes in the quadruped is not nerve, but a kind of internal periotteum.

* The turtle and the crocodile have a structure somewhat similar to this; and the intention is the same, for their skulls make no part of the organ.

^b This chalky substance is also found in the ears of amphibious animals.

As it is evident that fishes possess the organ of hearing, it becomes unnecessary to make or relate any experiment made with live fishes, which only tends to prove this fact; but I will mention one experiment to show that sounds affect them much, and is one of their guards, as it is in other animals. In the year 1762, when I was in Portugal, I observed in a nobleman's garden, near Lisbon, a small fish-pond full of different kinds of fish. Its bottom was level with the ground, and was made by forming a bank all round; with a shrubbery close to it. Whilst I was lying on the bank, observing the fish swimming about, I desired a gentleman, who was with me, to take a loaded gun and go behind the shrubs and fire it. The reason for going behind the shrubs was, that there might not be the least reflection of light. The instant the report was made, the fish seemed to be all of one mind, for they vanished instantaneously, raising as it were a cloud of mud from the bottom. In about five minutes afterwards they began to appear, and were seen swimming about as before.

Geoffroi, who has written on this organ, considers the ray as in the class of reptiles; and with that idea has examined their organ of hearing. He is by no means clear in his description, so that it is almost impossible to follow him; yet it is but doing him justice to allow, that he has discovered what is analogous to the three semi-circular canals in other animals, together with their union into one cavity; and mentions the chalky substance contained in that cavity and the nerves. But it is by no means clear, that he was acquainted with the external opening which leads to those canals. He says the entrance of the organ of hearing (by which one would suppose he means the *meatus auditorius externus*) is not easily discovered; neither does that which he describes correspond with the real situation of the external communication; we may therefore reasonably conclude that he is describing something else. He is not more clear in his mode of reasoning on the application of the parts to produce the sense of hearing. He observes that the organ of hearing is very imperfect in this species of animals; but supposes that to be compensated by the medium in which they live, and by which sound is conveyed to them being more dense than that of the air, by which sound is communicated to

L

animals

animals living on the land; and of this idea he is certainly the author. Monf. Geoffroi cannot indeed be said to have given a perfect account of the organ of hearing in fishes, yet on the whole he should be considered as a discoverer. For though he had only made his observations on the ray, as belonging to the class of reptiles; yet as it may be properly considered of the fish kind, he has a just claim to the discovery. Had I formerly been acquainted with this author's researches and pretensions, I should not have claimed a discovery to which I had not a prior right; nor should I have held the discovery of the external communication alone, an object of consequence enough to induce me to dispute the honour with Monf. Geoffroi.

In looking over the works of the different authors who have treated of the organ of hearing in fishes, I find from a passage in Willoughby,^a who published prior to Mr. Geoffroi, and indeed is quoted by him, that my claim, even to the discovery of the external opening, is not so strong as I believed it to be; for he mentions an external orifice in the skate, contiguous to what he supposes the organ of hearing in that fish. If what he alludes to is really the external opening of the ear, it gives him a prior claim to the discovery of that part of the organ; although from his account, he cannot be said to have been acquainted with the organ itself: but as we find in describing the external ear of the thornback that he has evidently mistaken the nose for it, of which he gives a tolerable full account, it is very obvious that he was ignorant of the opening into the ear.^b

Although professor Camper published an account of the organ of hearing in fishes so late as 1774, he did not seem at that time to have been acquainted with the external opening of the ear in the ray. After giving a description of the organ of hearing in the pike, he makes some general observations on the similarity of this organ in other fishes; but

^a Willoughbeii Historia Piscium, Oxonii 1686, lib. iii. cap. viii.

^b Lib. iii. cap. xiv.

excepts

excepts the shark and ray.* This exception we might suppose alluded to the auditory canal; but further on he explains what he meant by this exception, and does not mention the external opening in the ray; from which we may fairly conclude that he was not acquainted with it.†

* "Il est très-vraisemblable que toutes les autres espèces de poissons, tant *malacopterygii* qu'*acanthopterygii*, aussi-bien que les *branchiologi* & les *chondropterygii* d'Artedi, à l'exception des squalis & des raies, ont l'organe de l'ouïe construit à peu près de la même façon; je n'excepte pas l'esturgeon, quoique M. Klein, *ibid.* ait donné la description du conduit auditif, page 19, figure A, Tab. 2, b; ce poisson étant rare parmi nous, je n'ai eu occasion de l'examiner qu'une seule fois sans avoir trouvé ce conduit." *Memoires Etrangers de l'Academie des Sciences*, 1774, tom. 6, page 190.

† "Au contraire, les chiens de mer, les *galeis* de Rondelet & les poissons qu'il a décrites, *lib. XII*; les *squalis* d'Artedi & les raies, ont bien l'organe à peu près de la même composition, mais il est enfermé dans une caisse tout osseuse ou cartilagineuse, ce qui ne fait pas une différence essentielle; ils entendent donc comme les églefins, les morues, les baudroyes & les brochets, en un mot comme tous les autres poissons non amphibies: M. Geoffroi s'est trompé en comparant leurs organes avec celui des reptiles, tels que la vipère, les lézards, &c. qui entendent le son comme les quadrupèdes, les oiseaux & les amphibies aquatiques, savoir par le moyen de l'air & d'un tambour, comme j'ai dessein de le prouver dans une autre occasion." *Memoires Etrangers de l'Academie des Sciences*, 1774, tom. 6, page 190.

ACCOUNT OF CERTAIN RECEPTACLES OF AIR IN BIRDS, WHICH COMMUNICATE WITH THE LUNGS AND EUSTACHIAN TUBE.

SINCE the account of these receptacles was read before the Royal Society, in the year 1774, I have by the dissections of a number of birds been able to make some additional observations relative to the extent of the air-cells which communicate with the lungs in this class of animals. These latter observations were not however made in consequence of any regular design to investigate this subject further. For to have established the principle seemed all that was necessary, unless by general observations we could hope to throw more light on the final intention of this remarkable piece of mechanism.

Before the period I have mentioned, the communication subsisting in birds, between the air-cells of the lungs and other cavities of the body, had not been clearly explained, nor even much attended to by anatomists or natural historians. It is a singularity of structure peculiar to this tribe of animals; and an account of it, cannot, I imagine, be unacceptable to the public.

It is not my present intention to enter into minute descriptions of all the particular communications of this sort discoverable in birds by dissection, but only to mention such general facts as will serve to introduce the subject into natural history, and lead to an inquiry into the purposes which this structure was intended to answer. With this view I shall endeavour to give some idea of the construction of the lungs, and of the air-receptacles in birds; occasionally remarking the circumstances in which these principally differ from what is seen in other animals.

To make this matter more intelligible, I must previously give an idea of the difference between the particular parts in question, and those of other animals who are not endowed with this property; and first, the construction of the lungs, and then of those receptacles.

The

The mechanism of the lungs in birds, which renders them fit for conveying air to different parts of the body, consists principally in certain communications.

It has been asserted that birds have no diaphragm; but this opinion must have arisen either from a want of observation, or from too confined an idea of a diaphragm; for there is a moderately strong, but thin and transparent, membrane which covers the lower surface of the lungs, adheres to them, and affords insertion to several thin muscles which arise from the inner surfaces of the ribs. The use of this part seems to be that of lessening the concavity of the lungs towards the abdomen, at the time of inspiration, and thereby assisting to dilate the air-cells; for which reason it is to be considered as answering one main purpose of a diaphragm. Besides this attachment of the lungs to the diaphragm, they are also connected to the ribs, and to the sides of the vertebrae.

These adhesions are peculiar to this tribe of animals, and are of singular use, nay in fact are absolutely necessary in such lungs as those of birds; out of which it is intended the air should find a passage into other cavities. For if the lungs were loose in the cavity of the thorax, as is the case in many other animals, these cells could not be expanded, either by the depression of the diaphragm, or the elevation of the ribs; since the air rushing in to fill up the vacuum produced in the cavity of the chest by these actions would take the straight road from the trachea through these passages, and of consequence would expand no part of the lungs which lay out of that line, whereby respiration would be totally prevented, and an effect produced exactly similar to what happens in other animals where the lungs are so much wounded as to allow a free exit to the air at that part.

The cells in birds which receive air from the lungs, are to be found both in the soft parts, and in the bones; and have no communication with the cavity of the common cellular membrane. Some of these air-bags are placed in the larger cavities, as the abdomen; and others are so lodged in the interstices, as about the breast, axilla, &c. as at first to give the appearance of the common connecting membrane. Some of them communicate immediately with one another; and all may be said to

to have a communication by means of the lungs. They are of very different sizes, just as best suits the particular circumstances of the parts in which they are placed.

The bones which receive air are of two kinds; some, as the sternum, ribs, and vertebræ, have their internal substance divided into innumerable cells, whilst others, as the os humeri, and the os femoris, are hollowed out into one large canal, with sometimes a few bony columns running across at the extremities. Bones of this kind may be distinguished from those that do not receive air, by several marks: 1st, By their less specific gravity: 2dly, By being less vascular than the others, and therefore whiter: 3dly, By their containing little or no oil, and consequently being more easily cleaned; and when cleaned appearing much whiter than common bones: 4thly, By having no marrow, or even any bloody pulpy substance in their cells: 5thly, By not being in general so hard and firm as other bones; and 6thly, By the passage that allows the air to enter the bones, which can easily be perceived. In the recent bone we may readily discover holes, or openings, not filled with any such soft substance as blood-vessels or nerves; and it happens that several of these holes are placed together, near that end of the bone which is next to the trunk of the bird; and are distinguishable by having their external edges rounded off; which is not the case with the holes through which either nerves or blood-vessels pass into the substance of the bone.

When birds break any of the bones which contain air, the surrounding parts become emphysematous.

There are openings in the lungs, by which they transmit air to the other parts; and the membrane or diaphragm above mentioned is perforated in several places with holes of a considerable size, which admit of a free communication between the cells of the lungs and the abdomen, a circumstance which has been frequently noticed. To each of these perforations is joined a distinct membranous bag, extremely thin and transparent, which being afterwards continued through the whole of the

* The bones of some birds are so soft that they can be squeezed together with the finger and thumb; the bones of the extremities however have very solid sides.

abdomen

abdomen are attached to the back and sides of that cavity, by which the bags are kept firm in their proper situations ; each receiving the air from their respective openings. There is no occasion to describe here all the bags, or their attachments, it being sufficient to say that they extend over the whole abdomen.

The lungs at the anterior part, contiguous to the sternum, open into certain membranous cells which lie upon the sides of the pericardium, and communicate with the cells of the sternum. At the superior part the opening of the lungs is into the large cells of a loose net work, through which the trachea, œsophagus, and large vessels pass as they are going to and from the heart. When these cells are distended with air, the size of that part where they lie is very considerably increased, and in general is a mark of either the passion of anger or love. It is plainly seen in the Turkey-cock, the pouting pigeon, &c. and is very visible in the breast of a goose when she cackles. These cells communicate with others in the axilla, under the large pectoral muscle ; and in some birds are still further extended. In the pelican, for instance, the skin of the breast is united to the parts underneath by means of those cells, which are pretty equally formed ; and when the skin is removed, the two separated surfaces appear as if honey-combed. When these cells are distended, the skin is removed to a considerable distance, by which means the volume is proportionally increased. In most birds, I believe in all that fly, these axillary cells communicate with the cavity of the os humeri, by means of small openings in the hollow surface near the head of that bone. The ostrich however is an exception. In some birds they are continued down the wing, where they communicate with the ulna and radius, and in others they go even as far as the pinions.

The posterior edges of the lungs (which lie on the sides of the spine and project backwards between the ribs) open into the cells of the bodies of the vertebræ, into those of the ribs, the canal of the medulla spinalis, the cells of the sacrum, and other bones of the pelvis ; from which parts the air finds a passage into the cavity of the thigh bone. This takes place in the greatest number of birds ; but in some the air is even continued part of the way down the thighs. This account agrees with what

we

we generally find; though some birds have more, and some fewer of these communications; for in the ostrich no air gets into the os humeri, but it enters into every other part, as described above, and in very large quantities. In the common fowl no air appears to enter any bone except the os humeri. The wood-cock has no air-cells either in the first bone of the wing, or in the thigh bones. On the other hand, in the pelican the air passes on to the ulna and radius, and into those bones which answer to the carpus and metacarpus of quadrupeds.

Thus the cells of the abdomen, those surrounding the pericardium, those situated at the lower and forepart of the neck, and in the axilla, those in the cellular membrane under the pectoral muscles, as well as in that which unites the skin to the body, all communicate with the lungs, and are capable of being filled with air; and again from these the cells of the sternum, ribs, vertebræ of the back and loins, bones of the pelvis, the humeri, the ulna and radius, with the pinions, and thigh bones, can in many birds be furnished with air.

This supply of air is not conveyed to the bones solely by means of the lungs; for the cells of the bones of the head in some birds are likewise filled with it, of which the owl is a remarkable instance. In this bird the diploe between the two plates of the skull is cellular and admits a considerable quantity of air, which is furnished by the Eustachian tube.

Some authors considered the diploe in the cranium of a bird as a continuation of the mamillary process,^a and have looked upon it as a circumstance peculiar to singing birds, but this is not really the case. The lower jaw of many birds, but more particularly the pelican, is furnished with air, which is supplied by means of the Eustachian tube.^b

These

^a The only thing similar to this communication in birds, of the cells of bones with the external air, is that which takes place in the internal ear of quadrupeds, by means of the Eustachian tube.

^b When I wrote this account to send it to the Royal Society, I did not then know by what means this was done; for in that I said, "but by what means I do not know;" that is, I did not know whether it was conveyed by the trachea, where it passes along the neck, or the Eustachian tube. Professor Camper, when he did me the honour to call upon me, was so

These facts, which had been formerly observed, led me in the year 1758 to make several experiments upon the breathing of birds, to prove the free communication between the lungs and the above mentioned parts.

First, I made an opening into the belly of a cock, and having introduced a silver canula, tied up the trachea; I found that the animal breathed by this opening, and might have lived; but by an inflammation in the bowels coming on, adhesions were produced, and the communication cut off.

I next cut the wing through the os humeri, in another fowl, and tying up the trachea, as in the cock, found that the air passed to and from the lungs by the canal in this bone. The same experiment was made with the os femoris of a young hawk, and was attended with nearly the like success. But the passage of air through the parts in both, especially in the last experiment, was attended with more difficulty than in the first; it was indeed so great as to render it impossible for the animal to live longer than to prove evidently that it breathed through the cut bone.

I have made several preparations of these cells, by throwing into the trachea an injection commonly called the corroding injection, which first filled the air-cells of the lungs, then all the others, such as the cells in the abdomen, anterior and superior part of the chest, axilla, os humeri, cells of the back bone and thigh; then the whole being put into spirit of sea-salt, and corroded, the cast of injection came out entire.

The extreme singularity of these communications in birds, put me upon considering what might be their final intention. At first I suspected that it might be intended to assist the act of flying, that being the circumstance which appears the most peculiar to birds. It might be of service in that respect, I thought, by increasing the volume and strength with the same quantity of matter, and therefore without adding to the weight of the whole, which indeed would rather be diminished by the difference of

obliging as to take some pains to show me, in the lower jaw of the hawk, the hole where the air entered; which makes me suspect he did not understand what I had written. For after having given the marks by which such openings were particularly distinguished, it will hardly be supposed I could say that I did not know the hole where the air entered.

specific

specific gravity between the external and internal air. This opinion was strengthened, by observing that the feathers of birds contain also a considerable quantity of air and in the very part which requires the greatest strength: the analogy to which seems to hold good between this mechanism in birds; and what is discoverable in most kinds of fishes, rather favours this opinion. For these have air contained within their bodies, which I believe is commonly supposed to lessen their specific gravity, although this does not appear so necessary in fishes, who move in a much heavier element than birds.* But when I found that the ostrich (which is not intended

* When we consider that the elevating and suspending apparatus is much less in fishes than in birds, we might reasonably conceive the air in them was intended as a kind of equilibrium between the fish and water; and that progressive motion was the only thing wanted in the actions of fishes. Were we to reason upon general principles alone, we should suppose that those fishes who have the largest air-bags should have their muscles of a greater specific gravity; and those fishes that have none, should have the lightest flesh; therefore that the flesh of a shark, which has no air-bag, should be lighter than that of the salmon and cod, which have: but to know how far this, which appeared to be reasonable, was a fact, I made the following experiments.

Experiment 1. I took a portion of muscle of the shark, cod, and salmon, of the same weight in air; and first examined how far they occupied the same space, by immersing them in water, and observing the rise or fall of the water upon each of them being separately immersed in it.

The shark occupied the smallest space, the salmon a little more, and the cod the largest.

Experiment 2. I then suspended the same three portions, upon a level, in a glass vessel filled with water about two feet high, and let them all go at the same instant to see which would fall through the water in the shortest space of time. The shark got to the bottom first, the salmon next, and the cod last.

It is necessary to observe that, in both these experiments, the difference in bulk, and in the times of their falling was very little; but however sufficient to ascertain the fact for which the experiments were instituted.

To see how far the muscular flesh of birds was specifically lighter than that of a quadruped, I repeated the above experiments upon a portion of a hind, of a pigeon, and of a sheep, but could discover no visible difference in their weight.

It may be observed, there are two situations of oil in fishes; in one it is diffused through the body, as in the salmon, herring, &c. In the other it is in the liver, as in all of the ray, kind, cod, &c. and those who have it in one part have none in the other. The liver, in those of the ray kind, is large and extended through the belly; therefore it might be supposed to lighten the body, from oil being lighter than water or the flesh; but we have oil in the

intended to fly) was amply provided with these cells; and that the common fowl, and many others of that class, which are endowed with the faculty of flying, were less liberally supplied with air: when I saw that the wood-cock, which flies, and is even supposed a bird of passage, was inferior in this respect to the ostrich; and that the bat differed not in structure from animals that do not fly, I was compelled, by so many contradictions to theory, to suppose that this singular mechanism might be intended for some other purpose.

The next conjecture that offered, was, that these parts were to be considered as an appendage to the lungs; to which I was led by the analogy observable in amphibious animals. For in the snake, viper, and many others of them, the lungs are continued down through the whole belly, in form of two bags; of which the upper part only can perform the office of respiration with any degree of effect; the lower having comparatively but few air-vessels. The air must pass through this upper part before it gets to the lower in inspiration, and must also repass in expiration, so that the respiratory surface has more air applied to it than what the lungs of themselves could contain. It cannot however be supposed, that the air may be made to pass to and fro in bones as in parts which admit of contraction and dilatation; the purpose answered by these bony cells must therefore be different; and perhaps they should be considered as reservoirs of air. There is in fact a great similarity between birds and that class of animals called amphibious; and although a bird and a snake are not the same in the construction of the respiratory organs, yet the circumstance of the air passing in both beyond the lungs, into the cavity of the abdomen, naturally leads us to suppose, that a structure so similar is designed in each to a similar purpose. This analogy is still further supported by the lungs in both consisting of large cells. Now in amphibious animals, the use of such a conformation of the lungs is evident; for it is in consequence of this structure that they require to breathe less frequently than others. Even considering the matter in this

liver of the cod; and in the salmon, &c. there is a great deal of oil diffused through the whole; therefore I am afraid we are not yet acquainted with the full effect of the air-bladder in fishes.

light,

light, it may still, in birds, have some connection with flying, as that motion may easily be imagined to render frequency of respiration inconvenient, and a reservoir of air may therefore become singularly useful. Although we are not to consider this structure in birds to be an extension of lungs, yet I can easily conceive this accumulation of air to be of great use in respiration; for as we observed in the viper, that the air in its passage to and from these cells, must certainly have a considerable effect upon the blood in the lungs, by allowing a much greater quantity of air to pass in a given time than if there was no such construction of parts.* And this opinion will appear not to be ill founded, if we consider that both in the bird and the viper, the surface of the lungs is small in comparison to what it is in many other animals which have not this extension of cavity. It is also a corroborating circumstance, that in the fowl the air could have passed by a much readier way than through the lungs, into all the cells about the breast, neck, axilla, wings, &c. that could have been filled from the lower end of the trachea, upon which many of them lie. But the air must now take a roundabout passage both in its way in and in its way out, those openings being upon the exterior surface of the lungs. We must not however give up the idea of such structure being of use in flying; for I believe we may set it down as a general rule, that in the birds of longest and highest flight, as eagles, this extension, or diffusion of air is carried further than in the others; and this opinion is strengthened by comparing this structure with the respiratory organs in the flying insects, which are composed of cells diffused through the whole body; and these are extended even into the head and down the extremities; while there is no such structure in those insects that do not fly, as the spider; but why the pelican should be so amply provided, I cannot say, not knowing the natural history of that bird sufficiently to be able to judge of this point. Do they carry weights in the large fauces so as to require such an increase of body without increase of weight?

* It may perhaps occur to some that the whole of these communicating cells are to be considered as extended lungs; but I can hardly think that any air which gets beyond the vesiculated lungs themselves is capable of affecting the blood of the animal; as the other cavities into which it comes, as well those of the soft parts as of the bones, are very little vascular.

How

How far this construction of the respiratory organs may assist birds in singing, is deserving of notice ; as the vast continuance of song, between the breathings, in a Canary-bird, would appear to arise from it. This is a subject however which I shall not at present enter upon.

EXPERIMENTS

EXPERIMENTS AND OBSERVATIONS ON ANIMALS, WITH RESPECT TO THE POWER OF PRODUCING HEAT.

SOME late ingenious experiments and observations, published in the Philosophical Transactions, upon a power which animals seem to possess of generating cold, induced me to look over my notes, containing some which I had made in the year 1766, indicating an opposite power in animals, whereby they are capable of resisting any external cold while alive, by generating within themselves a degree of heat sufficient to counteract it. These experiments were not originally instituted with any expectation of the event which resulted from them, but for a very different purpose; which was no other than to satisfy myself, whether an animal could retain life after it was frozen, as had been confidently asserted both of fishes and snakes. If I had succeeded, I meant to have tried the effects of freezing, on living animals, to a much greater extent than ever can happen accidentally. For that snakes and fishes, after being frozen, have still retained so much of life, as when thawed to resume their vital actions, is a fact so well attested that we are bound to believe it. I mention these circumstances, to account for what might otherwise be attributed to negligence and inattention; namely, the little nicety that was used in measuring the precise degree of cold applied in these experiments. Accuracy in this particular was not aimed at, as it was of no consequence in the inquiry more immediately before me. The cold was first produced by means of ice and snow with sal ammoniac or sea-salt, to about the 10° of Fahrenheit's thermometer: then ice was mixed with spirit of nitre; but what degree of cold was thus produced I did not examine. This cold mixture was made in a tub surrounded with woollen cloths, and covered with the same, to prevent the effects of the heat of the atmosphere upon the mixture itself, and to preserve as much as possible a cold atmosphere within the vessel. The animal juices, the blood for example,

ample, freeze at 25° ; so that a piece of dead flesh could be frozen in such an atmosphere.

EXPERIMENTS.

I. THE first experiment was made on two carp. They were put into a glass vessel with common river water, and the vessel put into the freezing mixture; the water did not freeze fast enough; and therefore to make it freeze sooner we put in as much cooled snow as to render the whole thick. The snow round the carp melted: we put in more fresh snow, which melted also; and this was repeated several times, till we grew tired, and at last left them covered up in the yard to freeze by the joint operation of the surrounding mixture and the natural cold of the atmosphere. They were frozen at last, after having exhausted the whole powers of life in the production of heat. That this was really the case, could not be known till I had completed that part of the experiment for which the whole was begun, viz. the thawing of the animals. This was done very gradually; but the animals did not, with flexibility, recover life. While in this cold they shewed signs of great uneasiness by their violent motions. *N.B.* In some of these experiments, where air was made the conductor of the cold and heat, that the heat might be more readily carried off from the animal, a leaden vessel was used. It was small for the same reason; and as it was necessary for the animal's respiration that the mouth of the vessel should communicate with the open air, it was made pretty deep, that the cold of the atmosphere round the animal might not be diminished fast by the warmth of the open air, which would have spoiled it as a conductor.

II. The second experiment was upon a dormouse. The vessel was sunk in the cold mixture almost to its edge. The atmosphere round the animal soon cooled; its breath froze as it came from the mouth; an hoar-frost gathered on its whiskers, and on all the inside of the vessel; and the external points of the hair became covered with the same. While this was going on, the animal shewed signs of great uneasiness: sometimes it would coil itself into a round form, to preserve its extremities, and con-
fine

fine its heat; but finding that ineffectual, it then endeavoured to make its escape^a; its motions became less violent by the sinking of the vital powers; and its feet were frozen; but we were not able to keep up the cold a sufficient time to freeze the whole animal, its hair being so bad a conductor of heat, that the consumption was not more than the animal powers were capable of supporting.^b

III. The third experiment was made upon another dormouse. From the failure of the last experiment I took care that the hair should not a second time be an obstruction to the success of our experiment. I therefore first made it wet all over, that the heat of the animal might be more instantaneously carried off; and then it was put into a leaden vessel. The whole was put into the cold mixture as before. The animal soon gave signs of its feeling the cold, by repeated attempts to make its escape. The breath, and the evaporating water from its body were soon frozen, and appeared like a hoar-frost on the sides of the vessel, and on its whiskers; but while the vigour of life lasted, it defied the approach of the cold. However, from the hair being wet, and thereby rendered a good conductor of heat, there was a much greater consumption of it than in the former experiment. This hastened on a diminution of the power of producing it. The animal died, and soon became stiff; upon thawing it, we found it was quite dead.

IV. The fourth experiment was upon a toad. It was put into water just deep enough not to cover its mouth, and the whole was put into a cold mixture, now between 10° and 15°. It allowed the water to freeze close to it, which as it were, closed it in; but the animal did not die, and therefore was not frozen: however, it hardly ever recovered the use of its limbs.

^a This shows, that cold carried to a great degree rather rouses the animal into action than depresses it; but it would appear from many circumstances and observations, that a certain degree of cold produces inactivity both in the living and sensitive principle, which will be further illustrated hereafter.

^b These experiments were made in presence of Dr. George Fordyce and Dr. Erwin, teacher of Chymistry at Glasgow; the latter of whom came in accidentally in the middle of our operations.

N

V. The

V. The fifth experiment was with a snail, which froze very soon, in a cold between 10° and 13° ; but these two last experiments were made in the winter, when the living powers of those animals are very weak: they might have resisted the cold more strongly in the summer. Why the animals mentioned in these experiments died before they were frozen, while those which are exposed to the atmosphere in very cold climates do not, is a point I shall not pretend to determine; not knowing the difference between the effects of a natural and an artificial cold. It may be accounted for, by supposing that the natural cold in climates in which animals are found frozen, is so intense as to produce congelation immediately, before the powers of life are exhausted; at least whether it is so or not is worthy of inquiry.

It appears from the above experiments, that most probably the animals were deprived of life before they were frozen. Secondly, that there was an exertion or expence of animal powers in resisting the effects of cold, proportioned to the necessity. Thirdly, that this exertion was in proportion to the perfection of the animal, and the natural heat proper to each species, and to each age. It might also perhaps depend in some degree on other circumstances not hitherto observed: for from experiment II. and III. upon dormice, I found that in these animals, which are of a constitution to retain nearly the same heat in all temperatures of the air, it required the greatest cold I could produce to overcome this resisting power; while by experiment IV. and V. in the toad and snail, whose natural heat is not always the same, but is altered very materially according to the external heat or cold, this power was exhausted in a degree of cold not exceeding 10° or 15° : and the snail being the most imperfect of the two, its powers of generating heat appeared to be much the weakest.

That the imperfect animals will allow of a considerable variation in their temperature of heat and cold, is proved by the following experiments. The thermometer being at 45° , the ball was introduced by the mouth into the stomach of a frog, which had been exposed to the same cold. It rose to 49° . I then placed the frog in an atmosphere made warm by heated water, where I allowed it to stay twenty minutes; and upon introducing the thermometer into the stomach, it raised the quicksilver

silver to 64°. But to what degree the more imperfect animals are capable of being rendered hotter and colder at one time than another, I have not been able to determine. The torpidity of these animals in our winter is probably owing to the great change wrought in their temperature by the external heat and cold. The cold in their bodies is to such a degree, as in a great measure to put a stop, while it lasts, to the vital functions; while in warmer climates no such effect is produced. This variety not only takes place in animals of different orders; but in some degree in the same animal at different ages, even according to the different ages of parts in the same animal; for an animal is naturally alike old in all its original parts, yet there are often new ones formed in consequence of diseases; and we find, that these new or young parts in animals are not able to support life equally with the old; but as animals are of different ages, and the same animal is always growing older, and of course more and more perfect, they then become more capable of generating heat than when they were younger.

This power of generating heat seems to be a property in an animal while alive. It is a power only of opposition and resistance; for it is not found to exert itself spontaneously and unprovoked; but must always be excited by the energy of some external frigorific agent, or disease. It does not depend on the motion of the blood, as some have supposed, because it likewise belongs to animals who have no circulation; and the nose of a dog, which is always nearly of the same heat in all temperatures of the air, is well supplied with blood: neither can it be said to depend upon the nervous system, for it is found in animals that have no brain or nerves. It is then most probable that it arises from some other principle; a principle so connected with life, that it can, and does, act independently of circulation, sensation; and volition; and is that power which preserves and regulates the internal machine. This power of generating heat is in the highest perfection when the body is in health; and in many deviations from that state we find that its action is extremely uncertain and irregular; sometimes rising higher than the standard, and at other times falling much below it. Instances of this we have in different diseases, and even in the same disease, within very short intervals

of time. A very remarkable one fell under my own observation, in a gentleman who was seized with an apoplectic fit; and while he lay insensible in bed, covered with blankets, I found that his whole body would, in an instant, become extremely cold in every part, continuing so for some time; and, as suddenly, would become extremely hot. While this was going on alternately, there was no sensible alteration in his pulse for several hours.

Being master of the foregoing fact, that animals had a power of generating heat, I pursued the subject still further; not so much with a view to account for animal heat, as to observe the different phenomena, with the variations or difference in different animals. In the course of my experiments having found variations in the degree of heat and cold in the same experiment, for which I could not account, I suspected that this might arise from some imperfection in the construction of the thermometer. I mentioned to Mr. Ramsden my objection to the common construction of that instrument, and my ideas of one more perfect in its nature, and better adapted to the experiments in which I was engaged. He accordingly made me some very small thermometers, six or seven inches long, not above two-twelfths of an inch thick in the stem; having the external diameter of the ball very little larger than that of the stem, on which was marked the freezing point. The stem was embraced by a small ivory scale so as to slide upon it easily, and retain any position. Upon the hollow surface of this scale were marked the degrees which were seen through the stem. By these means the size of the thermometer was very much reduced, and it could be applied to soft bodies with much more ease and certainty, and in many cases in which the former ones could not be conveniently used; I therefore repeated with it such of my former experiments as had not at first proved satisfactory, and found the degrees of heat very different, not only from what I had expected, but also from what I had found by my former experiments with the thermometers of the common construction.

I have observed above, and find it supported by every experiment I have made on the heat and cold of animals, that the more perfect have the greatest power of retaining a certain degree of heat, which may be called,

called their standard heat, and allow of much less variation than the more imperfect animals : however, it will appear from the three experiments which I am now going to relate, that many, if not all of them, are incapable of keeping constantly to one degree ; but may be altered from their standard heat, either by external applications, or disease. However, these variations are much greater below that standard than above it ; the perfect animals having a greater power of resisting heat than cold, so that they are commonly near their ultimate heat. Indeed we do not want any other proof of a variation than our own feelings : we are all sensible of heat and of cold, which sensations could not be produced without an alteration really taking place in the parts affected ; and that alteration could not take place if they did not become actually warmer or colder. I have often cooled my hands to such a degree, that I could warm them by immersing them in water just pumped ; therefore my hands were really colder than the pump-water.

An increase of absolute heat must alter the texture or position of the parts, so as to produce the sensation which we likewise call heat : and as that heat is diminished, the texture or position of the parts is altered in a contrary way ; and, when carried to a certain degree, becomes the cause of the sensation of cold. Now these effects could not take place in either case without an increase or decrease of absolute heat in the part ; heat therefore in its different degrees must be present. When heat is applied to the surface of the body, the skin becomes in some degree heated according to the application ; which may be carried so far as actually to burn the living parts : on the contrary, in a cold atmosphere, a man's hand may become so cold as to lose that sensation altogether, and change it for pain. Absolute heat and cold may be carried so far as even to alter the structure of the parts upon which the actions of life depend.

As animals are subject to variations in their degrees of heat and cold from external applications, they are of course, in this respect, affected in some measure like inanimate matter : and therefore, as parts are elongated or recede from the common mass, these effects more readily take place : for instance, all projecting parts and extremities, more especially toes, fingers, noses, ears, combs of fowls, particularly of the
cock,

cock, are more readily cooled, and are therefore most subject to be affected by cold. Animals are not only subject to an increase and decrease of heat, similar to inanimate matter; but the transition from one to the other (as far as they admit of it) is nearly as quick. I shall not however confine myself to sensation alone, as that is in some degree regulated by habit: for a habit of uniformity in the application of heat and cold to an animal body, renders it more sensible of the smallest variation in either; while by the habit of variety it will become, in a proportionable degree, less susceptible of all such sensations. This is proved every day, in cold weather, by people who are accustomed to clothe themselves warm. In them the least exposure to cold air, although the effect produced in the skin is perhaps not the hundredth part of a degree, immediately gives the sensation of cold, even through the thickest covering: those, on the contrary, who have been used to go thinly clothed, can bear the variation of some degrees without being sensible of it: of this the hands and feet afford an instance in point; exciting the sensation of cold when applied to another part of the body, without having before given to the mind an impression of cold existing in them. The projecting parts and the extremities are those which admit of the greatest change in their degrees of heat and cold, without materially affecting the animal, or even its sensations. I find that by heat or cold externally applied to such parts, the thermometer may, in some degree, be made to rise or fall; but not in an equal proportion as when applied to inanimate matter. Nor are the living parts cooled or heated in the same proportion, as appears from the application of the thermometer to the skin; for the cuticle is to be considered as a dead covering, capable of receiving greater degrees of heat and cold than the living parts underneath; and as it might be suspected that the whole of the variation was in this covering, to remove any such doubt I made the following experiments.

Experiment I. I placed the ball of my thermometer under my tongue, where it was perfectly covered by all the surrounding parts; and having kept it there for some minutes, I found that it rose to 97° ; but this being continued, it rose no higher. I then took several pieces of ice, about the size of walnuts, and put them in the same situation, allowing them only

to

melt in part, that the application of cold might be better kept up, occasionally spitting out the water arising from the solution: this I continued for ten minutes, and found, on introducing my thermometer, that it fell to 77° ; so that the mouth at this part had lost 20° of heat. The thermometer gradually rose to 97° again; but did not in this experiment sink so low as it would have done in the hand, if a piece of ice had been held in it for the same length of time. Perhaps the surface under the tongue being surrounded with warm parts, renders it next to an impossibility to cool it to any greater degree: but I rather suspect that such parts as the hand will allow of greater latitude in this respect, from having insensibly acquired the habit of varying the degree of cold, and becoming of course less susceptible of its impressions.

As a further proof, that the more perfect animals are capable of varying their heat, in some measure, according to the external heat applied, I shall adduce the following experiments made on the human subject.

The mouth being a part so frequently in contact with the external atmosphere in the action of breathing, whatever is put into it may be supposed to be influenced by that atmosphere; this will always render an experiment made in that part, relative to heat and cold, somewhat uncertain. I imagined that the urethra would answer better, because being an internal cavity it can only be influenced by heat and cold applied to the external skin of the parts. I imagined also, that whatever effects the application of heat and cold might have, they would sooner take place in the urethra, as being a projecting part, than in any other part of the body; and therefore if living animal matter was in any degree subject to the common laws of matter in this respect, the urethra would be readily affected: for this reason I got a person who allowed me to make such experiments as I thought necessary.

Experiment II. I introduced the ball of my thermometer into the urethra about an inch; after it had remained there about a minute, the quicksilver rose only to 92° : at two inches it rose to 93° ; at four inches the quicksilver rose to 94° ; and when the ball had got as far as the bulb of the urethra, where it was surrounded by warm parts, the quicksilver rose to 97° .

Experiment

Experiment III. These parts being immersed for one minute in water, heated only to 65° , and the thermometer introduced about an inch and a half into the urethra, the quicksilver rose to 79 : this was repeated several times with the same success. As the urethra still appeared to be the part of an animal best calculated for experiments of this kind; to find if there was any difference in the quickness of the transition of heat and cold in living and dead parts, and if the extent to which each would go, was likewise different, I procured a dead penis to make the following comparative experiments; being clearly of opinion that all such trials should be as similar as possible, excepting in those points where the difference (if there is any) makes the essential part of the experiment.

Experiment IV. The heat of the penis of a living person, an inch and a half within the urethra, being found exactly 92° ; and having heated the dead one to the same degree, I had both immersed in the same vessel, with the water at 50° , where introducing the thermometers different times, I observed the comparative quickness with which they cooled from 92° . The dead cooled sooner by only two or three degrees. The living came down to 58° , and the dead to 50° . After having continued the thermometer there some time longer, it fell no lower. I repeated the same experiment several times, with the same success; although at one time there might be a small difference in the degrees of heat from that of another, the heat of the water also differing; but the difference in the result was nearly proportional in all the three different trials, therefore the same conclusions may be drawn from them. In these last experiments we find very little difference between the cooling of a part of a dead and of a living body; but we cannot suppose this to take place uniformly through the whole body, as in that case a living man would always be of the same degree of heat with the atmosphere in which he lives. The man not choosing to be cooled lower than 53° or 54° , prevented my seeing if the powers of generating heat were exerted in a higher degree when the heat was brought so low as to threaten destruction; but by some experiments on mice, which will be related hereafter, it will appear that the animal powers are roused to exert themselves in this respect when necessary.

From

From the experiments related I found, that parts of an animal were capable of being reduced below the common or natural heat; I therefore made other experiments, with a view to see whether the same parts were capable of becoming much hotter than the standard heat of animals. The experiments were made in the same manner as the former, only the water was now hotter than the natural heat of the animal.

Experiment V. The natural heat of the parts being 92°, they were immersed for two minutes in water heated to 113°, and the thermometer being introduced as before, the quicksilver rose to 100° and a half. This experiment I also repeated several times, but could not raise the heat of the penis beyond 100° and a half: this was probably owing to the person not being able at this time to bear the application of water warmer than 113°. As these were only single experiments, I made a comparative one with the dead part.

Experiment VI. Both the living and dead part being immersed in water, gradually made warmer and warmer from 100° to 118°, and continued in this heat for some minutes, the dead part raised the thermometer to 114°, while the living raised it no higher than 102° and a quarter. It was observed, by the person on whom the experiment was made, that after the parts had been in the water about a minute, the water did not feel hot; but on its being agitated it felt so hot that he could hardly bear it. Upon applying the thermometer to the sides of the living glans, the quicksilver immediately fell from 118° to about 104°, while it did not fall more than a degree when put close to the dead; so that the living glans cooled the surrounding water to a certain distance.*

Experiment VII. The heat of the rectum in the same man was 98° and a half exactly.

In the second, third, fourth, fifth, and sixth experiments, an internal cavity, which is both very vascular and sensible, was evidently influenced

* This might furnish an useful hint respecting bathing in water, whether colder or warmer than the heat of the body: for if intended to be either colder or hotter, it will soon be of the same temperature with that of the body; therefore in a large bath, the patient should move from place to place; and in a small one, there should be a constant succession of water of the intended heat.

by external heat and cold, though only applied to the skin of the part ; while, in the seventh experiment, another part of the same body, where external heat and cold could make little or no impression, was of the standard heat. Although it will appear from experiment, that the rectum is not the warmest part of an animal ; yet, in order to determine how far the heat could be increased by stimulating the constitution to a degree sufficient to quicken the pulse, I repeated the seventh experiment after the man had eaten a hearty supper and drank a bottle of wine, which increased the pulse from 73° to 87°, and yet the thermometer only rose to 98° and a half.

Having formerly made experiments upon dormice in the sleeping season, with a view to see if there was any alteration in the animal economy at that time, I found among my notes an account of some experiments which appear to our present purpose : but that I might be more certain of the accuracy of my former experiments, I repeated them with my new thermometer.

Experiment VIII. In a room, in which the air was at between 50° and 60° of temperature, a small opening was made in the belly of a dormouse, of a sufficient size to admit the ball of my thermometer, which being introduced into the belly at about the middle of that cavity, rose to 80°, and no higher.

Experiment IX. The mouse was put into a cold atmosphere of 15° above 0, and left there for fifteen minutes ; after which the thermometer being introduced a second time, it rose to 85°.

Experiment X. The mouse was again put into a cold atmosphere for fifteen minutes ; and the thermometer being again introduced, the quicksilver rose to 72° only, but gradually came up to 83°, 84°, and 85°.

Experiment XI. It was put a third time into the cold atmosphere, and allowed to stay there for thirty minutes ; the lower part of the mouse was at the bottom of the dish, and almost frozen ; the whole of the animal was numbed, and a good deal weakened. When the thermometer was introduced, the heat varied in different parts of the belly ; in the pelvis, near the parts most exposed to the cold, it was as low as 62° ;
in

in the middle, among the intestines, about 70° ; but near the diaphragm it rose to 80° , 82° , 84° , and 85° ; so that in the middle of the body the heat had decreased 10° . Finding a variation in different parts of the same cavity in the same animal, I repeated the same experiments upon another dormouse.

Experiment XII. I took a healthy dormouse, which had been asleep from the coldness of the atmosphere, and brought it into a room in which there was a fire (the atmosphere at 64°); I put the thermometer into its belly, nearly at the middle, between the thorax and pubis, and the quicksilver rose to 74° or 75° ; when I turned the ball towards the diaphragm, it rose to 80° ; and when I applied it to the liver, it rose to 81° and a half.

Experiment XIII. The mouse was put into an atmosphere at 20° , and left there half an hour; when taken out it was very lively, much more so than when put in. I introduced the thermometer into the lower part of the belly, and it rose to 91° ; and upon turning it up to the liver, to 93° .

Experiment XIV. The animal was put back into the cold atmosphere at 30° for an hour, when the thermometer was again introduced into the belly; at the liver it rose to 93° ; in the pelvis to 92° ; it was still very lively.

Experiment XV. It was again put back into the cold atmosphere at 19° , and left there an hour; the thermometer at the diaphragm was 87° ; in the pelvis 83° ; but the animal was now less lively.

Experiment XVI. It was put into its cage, and two hours after the thermometer, placed at the diaphragm, was at 93° .

As I was unable to procure hedge-hogs in the torpid state, to ascertain their heat during that period, I got my friend, Mr. Jenner, surgeon, at Berkley, to make the same experiments on that animal, that I might compare them with those in the dormouse; and his account is as follows.

"Experiment I. In the winter the atmosphere at 44° , the heat of a torpid hedge-hog, in the pelvis, was 45° , and at the diaphragm 48° and a half.

Experiment II. The atmosphere 26° , the heat of a torpid hedge-hog, in the cavity of the abdomen, was reduced so low as 30° .

Experiment III. The hedge-hog was exposed to the cold atmosphere of 26° for two days; and the heat of the rectum was found to be 93° ; the wound in the abdomen being now so small that it would not admit the thermometer.

A comparative experiment was made with a puppy, the atmosphere at 50° ; the heat in the pelvis, as also at the diaphragm, was 102° .

In summer the atmosphere 78° , the heat of the hedge-hog, in an active state, in the cavity of the abdomen, towards the pelvis, was 95° ; at the diaphragm 97° .

We find from these experiments, that the heat of an animal is increased under the circumstances of cold, whenever there are actions to be carried on for which heat is necessary.

In the experiments on the first dormouse, the heat of the animal was 80° ; which is below the standard heat of the actions of that animal; and after being put into the cold mixture, its heat was raised to 85° . In the second dormouse the heat was raised by repeated experiments from 75° to 93° . A question naturally occurs here, was the increase of heat owing to the animals being put into a cold atmosphere, and therefore generated to resist the cold? Or was it owing to a wound having been made into the cavity of the abdomen, which required an exertion of the animal powers to repair the injury; and which actions could not take place without the necessary degree of heat? That it was in consequence of the wound, appears evident from the experiment made upon the second hedge-hog; for in an atmosphere of 26° of heat, it was in a very torpid state, and did not raise the thermometer higher than 30° ; but after being put back into the cold, and kept there for two days, its heat in the rectum was 93° ; and so far from being torpid, it was lively, and the bed in which it lay felt warm.

As this animal allowed its heat to come so low as 30° , when there was no necessary action to take place, the increased heat cannot be attributed to the effects of cold; but must be referred to the wound made into the belly, that called forth the powers of the animal to repair an injury

injury which they could not affect in a degree of heat below the standard heat of the animal; and this stimulus of necessity for action caused an exertion of the powers of generating heat, even in a degree of cold that would have otherways brought the animal so low as 30° .

Why the heat of the dormouse should be so low as 80° , in an atmosphere of between 50° and 60° , is not easily accounted for, (except upon the principle of sleep). But I should very much suspect, that sleep, simply considered, is out of the question, as sleep is an effect that takes place in all degrees of heat and cold. In those animals where the voluntary actions are suspended by cold, it appears to produce the effect by acting in a certain degree as a sedative, in consequence of which the animal faculties are proportionably weakened, but still retain, even under such circumstances, the power of carrying on all the functions of life. Beyond this point cold seems to act as a stimulant, and rouses the animal powers to action for self-preservation. It is more than probable, that most animals are in this predicament; and that every order has its degree of cold by which the voluntary actions must be suspended.

When a man is asleep, he is colder than when awake; and I find, in general, that the difference is about one degree and an half, sometimes less. But this difference in the degree of cold between sleeping and waking is not a cause of sleep, but an effect; for many diseases produce a much greater degree of cold in the animal, without giving the least tendency to sleep; therefore the inactivity of animals from cold is different from sleep. Besides, all the operations of perfect life, as digestion, sensation, &c. are going on in the time of natural sleep, at least in the perfect animals; but none of these operations are performed in the torpid animals.

To see how far the result of these experiments upon dormice was peculiar to them, I wished to repeat the same experiments upon common mice; for which purpose I procured two, one strong and vigorous, the other weakened by fasting.

Experiment. XVII. The common atmosphere being at 60° , I introduced the thermometer into the abdomen of the strong mouse; the ball
being

being at the diaphragm, the quicksilver was raised to 99° , but at the pelvis only to 96° and three quarters.

Here there was a real difference of about 9° in two animals of the same size, in some degree of the same genus, and at the same season of the year, and the atmosphere of nearly the same temperature.

Experiment XVIII. The same mouse was put into a cold atmosphere of 13° , for an hour, and then the thermometer was introduced as before; the quicksilver at the diaphragm was raised to 83° , in the pelvis only to 78° .

Here the real heat of the animal was diminished 16° at the diaphragm, and 18° in the pelvis.

Experiment XIX. In order to determine whether an animal that is weakened has the same powers, with respect to preserving heat and cold, as one that is vigorous and strong, I introduced the ball of the thermometer into the belly of the weak mouse; the ball being at the diaphragm, the quicksilver rose to 97° ; in the pelvis to 95° : the mouse being put into an atmosphere as cold as the other, and the thermometer again introduced, the quicksilver stood at 79° at the diaphragm, and at 74° in the pelvis.

In this experiment the heat at the diaphragm was diminished 18° , in the pelvis 21° .

Here was a diminution of heat in the second greater than in the first, we may suppose proportional to the decreased power of the animal, arising from want of food.

To determine how far different parts of other animals than those mentioned were of different degrees of heat, I made the following experiments upon a healthy dog.

Experiment XX. The ball of the thermometer being introduced two inches within the rectum, the quicksilver rose to 100° and a half exactly. The chest of the dog was then opened, and a wound made into the right ventricle of the heart, and immediately on the ball being introduced, the quicksilver rose to 101° exactly. A wound was next made some way into the substance of the liver; and the ball being introduced, the quicksilver rose to 100° and three quarters. It was next introduced into
the

the cavity of the stomach, where it stood exactly at 101° . All these experiments were made within a few minutes.

Experiment XXI. The thermometer was introduced into the rectum of an ox, and the quicksilver rose exactly to 99° and a half.

Experiment XXII. This was also repeated upon a rabbit, and the quicksilver rose to 99° and a half.

From the experiments on mice, and those upon the dog, it plainly appears, that every part of an animal is not of the same degree of heat; and hence we may reasonably infer, that the heat of the vital parts of man is greater than either the mouth, rectum, or the urethra.

To determine how far my idea was just, that the heat of animals varied in proportion to their imperfections, I made the following experiments upon fowls, which I considered to be one remove below what are commonly called quadrupeds.

Experiment XXIII. I introduced the ball of the thermometer successively into the intestinum rectum of several hens, and found that the quicksilver rose as high as 103° , 103° and a half, and in one of them to 104° .

Experiment XXIV. I made the same experiments on several cocks, and the result was the same.

Experiment XXV. To determine if the heat of the hen was increased when she was prepared for incubation, I repeated the twenty-third experiment upon several sitting or clucking hens; in one the quicksilver rose to 104° ; in the other to 103° and a half, 103° , as in the twenty-third experiment.

Experiment XXVI. I placed the ball of the thermometer under the same hen, in whose rectum the quicksilver was raised to 104 , and found the heat as great as in the rectum.

Experiment XXVII. Having taken some of the eggs from under the same hen, where the chick was about three parts formed, I broke a hole in the shell, and introducing the ball of the thermometer, found that the quicksilver rose to 99° and a half. In some that were addled, I found the heat not so high by two degrees; so that the life in the living egg assisted in some degree to support its own heat.

It

It may be asked, whether the increase of three or four degrees of heat, which is found in the fowl more than in the quadruped, is for the purpose of incubation? We found that the heat in the eggs, which was caused and supported by the heat of the fowls, was not above the standard of the quadrupeds; and that it would probably have been less, if the heat of the hen had not been so great.

Finding from the above experiments, that fowls were some degrees warmer than that class commonly called quadrupeds (although certainly less perfect animals) I chose to continue the experiments upon the same principle, and made the following upon those of a still inferior order. The next remove from the fowl is those commonly called amphibious.

Experiment XXVIII. I took a healthy viper, and introduced the thermometer into its stomach, and afterwards into its anus; the quicksilver rose to 58° (the heat of the atmosphere in which it was) to 68° ; so that it was 10° warmer than the common atmosphere.

Experiment XXIX. The viper being put into a pan, and the pan into a cold mixture of about 10° ; after remaining there about ten minutes, its heat was reduced to 37° . Being allowed to stay ten minutes longer, the mixture at 13° , its heat was reduced to 35° . It was continued ten minutes more in the mixture at 20° , and its heat was reduced to 31° , nor did it sink lower; its tail beginning to freeze; and the animal now becoming very weak. It may be remarked, that it cooled much slower than many of the animals mentioned in the following experiments.

The frog being, in its structure, more similar to the viper than to either the fowl or fish, I made the following experiments on that animal.

Experiment XXX. I introduced the ball of the thermometer into its stomach, and the quicksilver stood at 44° . I then put the frog into a cold mixture, and the quicksilver sunk to 31° ; the animal appeared almost dead, but recovered very soon: beyond this point it was not possible to lessen the heat, without destroying the animal. But its decrease of heat was quicker than in the viper, although the mixture was nearly the same.

The next experiments were made on fishes.

Experiment

Experiment XXXI. Having ascertained the heat of the water in a pond, in which there were carp, to be 65° and a half, I took a carp out of this water, and introduced the thermometer into its stomach; the quicksilver rose to 69° ; so that the difference between the water and the fish was only 3° and a half.

Experiment XXXII. In an eel, the heat in the stomach, which at first was at 37° , sunk, after it had been some time in the cold mixture, to 31° . The animal at that time appeared dead, but was alive the next day.

Experiment XXXIII. In a snail, whose heat was at 44° , it sunk, after it had been put into the cold mixture, to 31° , and then the animal froze.

Experiment XXXIV. Several leaches having been put into a bottle, and the bottle immersed in the cold mixture, the ball of the thermometer being placed in the middle of them, the quicksilver sunk to 31° ; and by continuing the immersion for a sufficient time to destroy life, the quicksilver rose to 32° , and then the leaches froze. In all these experiments the animals when thawed were found dead.

Finding that the imperfect classes of animals will bear to have their heat reduced to that point at which the solids and fluids freeze when dead, but if much below it, death must be the consequence, I wished to determine to what degree of heat the animal could be raised.

Experiment XXXV. A healthy viper was put into an atmosphere of 108° , and allowed to stay seven minutes, when the heat of the animal in the stomach and anus was found to be 92° and a half, beyond which it could not be raised in the above heat. The same experiment was made upon frogs with nearly the same result.

Experiment XXXVI. An eel, very weak, its heat at 44° , which was nearly that of the atmosphere, was put into water heated to 65° , for fifteen minutes; and, upon examination, it was of the same degree of heat with the water.

Experiment XXXVII. A tench, whose heat was 41° , was put into water at 65° , and left there ten minutes; the ball of the thermometer
P being

being introduced both into the stomach and rectum, the quicksilver rose to 55° . These experiments were repeated with nearly the same result.

To determine whether life had any power of resisting heat and cold in these inferior classes of animals, I made comparative trials between living and dead ones.

Experiment XXXVIII. I took a living and a dead tench, and a living and a dead eel, and put them into warm water; they all received heat equally fast; and when they were exposed to cold, both the living and the dead admitted the cold likewise with equal quickness.

I had long suspected, that the principle of life was not wholly confined to animals, or animal substance endowed with visible organization and spontaneous motion; but I conceived, that the same principle existed in animal substances, devoid of apparent organization and motion, where the power of preservation was simply required.

I was led to this notion twenty years ago, when I was making drawings of the growth of the chick in the process of incubation. I then observed, that whenever an egg was hatched, the yolk (which is not diminished in the time of incubation) was always perfectly sweet to the very last; and that part of the albumen, which is not expended on the growth of the animal, some days before hatching, was also perfectly sweet, although both were kept in a heat of 103° , in the hen's egg for three weeks, and in the duck's for four; but I observed, that if an egg was not hatched, that egg became putrid in nearly the same time with any other dead animal matter.

To determine how far eggs would stand other tests of a living principle, I made the following experiments.

Experiment XXXIX. Having put an egg into a cold about 0, which froze it, I then allowed it to thaw; from this process I imagined that the preserving powers of the egg must be destroyed. I next put this egg into the cold mixture, and with it one newly laid; and the difference in freezing was seven minutes and a half, the fresh one taking so much longer time in freezing.

Experiment XL. A new laid egg was put into a cold atmosphere, fluctuating between 17° and 15° ; it took above half an hour to freeze; but

but when thawed and put into an atmosphere at 25° , it froze in half the time. This experiment was repeated several times with nearly the same result.

To determine the comparative heat between a living and a dead egg, and also to determine whether a living egg be subject to the same laws with the more imperfect animals, I made the following experiments.

Experiment XLI. A fresh egg, and one which had been frozen and thawed, were put into the cold mixture at 15° ; the thawed one soon came to 32° , and began to swell and congeal; the fresh one sunk to 29° and a half, and in twenty-five minutes after the dead one, it rose to 32° , and began to swell and freeze.

The result of this experiment upon the fresh egg was similar to the above experiments upon the frog, eel, snail, &c. where life allowed the heat to be diminished two or three degrees below the freezing point, and then resisted all further decrease; but the powers of life were expended by this exertion, and then the parts froze like any other dead animal matter.

From these experiments it appears, that a fresh egg has the power of resisting heat, cold, and putrefaction, in a degree equal to many of the more imperfect animals; and it is more than probable, this power arises from the same principle in both.

From the circumstance of those imperfect animals (upon which I made my experiments) varying their heat so readily, we may conclude, that heat is not so very essential to life in them as in the more perfect; although it be essential to many of the operations, or what may be called the secondary actions of life, such as digesting food,* and propagating the species, both which, especially the last, require the greatest powers an animal can exert. The animals which we call imperfect being commonly employed in the act of digestion, we may suppose their degree of heat to be only what that action requires; it not being essentially necessary for the life of the animal that heat should ever rise so high in them

* How far this idea holds good with fishes I am not certain.

as to call forth the powers necessary for the propagation of the species.*

Therefore, whenever these imperfect animals are exposed to a cold so great as to weaken their powers, and disable them from performing the first of these secondary actions, they in some measure cease to be voluntary agents, and remain in a torpid state during that degree of cold which always occurs during some part of the winter in such countries as they inhabit; and the food of such animals not being in general produced in the cold season, is a reason why this torpidity becomes in some measure necessary.

From this circumstance of the heat of such animals being allowed to sink to the freezing point, or somewhat lower, and then becoming stationary; and the animal not being able to support life in a much greater degree of cold for any length of time, we see a reason why they always endeavour to procure places of abode in the winter where the cold seldom sinks to that point. Thus we find toads burrowing, frogs living under large stones, snails seeking shelter under stones and in holes, and fishes having recourse to deep water; the heat of all which places is generally above the freezing point in our hardest frosts; which however are sometimes so severe, as to kill many whose habitations are not well chosen.

* The hedge-hog may be called a truly torpid animal, and we find that its heat is diminished when the actions are not vigorous. From a general review of this whole subject it would appear, that a certain degree of heat in the animal is necessary for its various economical operations, among which is digestion; and that necessary heat will be according to the nature of the animal, and probably the nature of the necessary operations to be performed. A frog will digest food when its heat is at 60° , but not when at 35° or 40° ; and it is very probable that, when the heat of the bear, hedge-hog, dormouse, bat, &c. is reduced to 70° , 75° , or 80° , they lose their power of digestion; or rather that the body, in such a degree of cold, has no call upon the stomach. That animals, in a certain degree of heat, must always have food, is further illustrated by the instance of bees. The construction of a bee is very similar to a fly, a wasp, &c. A fly and a wasp can allow their heat to diminish as in the fish, snake, &c. without losing life, but a bee cannot; therefore a bee is obliged to keep up its heat as high as what we call its digestive heat, but not its propagating; for which purpose they provide against such cold as would deprive them even of their digestive heat, if they had not food to preserve it.

When

When the frost is more intense and of longer standing than common, or in countries where the winters are always severe, there is generally snow, and the water freezes: the advantage arising from these two circumstances are great; the snow serving as a blanket to the earth, and the ice to the water.*

As all the experiments I ever made upon the freezing of animals, with a view to see if it were possible to restore the actions of life when thawed, were made upon whole ones, and as I never saw life return by thawing,† I wished to see how far parts were similar to the whole in this respect; especially as it is asserted, and with some authority, that parts of a man may be frozen, and afterwards recover: for this purpose I made the following experiments upon an animal of the same order as ourselves.

In January 1777, I mixed salt and ice till the cold was about 0; on the side of the vessel was a hole, through which I introduced the ear of a rabbit. To carry off the heat as fast as possible, it was held between two flat pieces of iron that went further into the mixture. That part

* Snow and ice are perhaps the worst conductors of heat of any substance yet known. In the first place, they never allow their own heat to rise above the freezing point, so that no heat can pass through ice or snow when at 32°, by which means they become an absolute barrier to all heat that is at or above that degree; so that the heat of the earth, or whatever substance they cover, is retained: but they are conductors of heat below 32°. Perhaps that power decreases in proportion as the heat decreases under that point.

In the winter 1776, a frost came on, the surface of the ground was frozen; but a considerable fall of snow fell, and continued several weeks; the atmosphere at this time was often at 15°, but it was allowed to affect the surface of the earth so inconsiderably, that the surface of the ground thawed, and the earth retained the heat of 34°, in which beans and peas grow.

The same thing took place in a pond where the water was frozen on the surface to a considerable thickness; a large quantity of snow fell and covered the ice; the heat of the water was preserved and thawed the ice, and the snow at its under surface was found mixed with the water.

The heat of the water under the snow was at 35°, in which fishes lived very well.

It would be worthy of the attention of the philosopher, to investigate the cause of the heat of the earth, upon what principle it is preserved, &c.

† Vide Phil. Trans. for the year 1775, vol. LXV. part II. p. 446.

of

of the ear projecting into the vessel became stiff, and when cut did not bleed; and the part cut off by a pair of scissors, flew from between the blades like a hard chip.

The ear remained in the mixture nearly an hour: when taken out it soon thawed, and began to bleed, and became very flaccid, so as to double upon itself, having lost its natural elasticity. When out of the mixture nearly an hour, it became warm, and this warmth increased to a considerable degree, and also began to thicken, in consequence of inflammation, while the other ear continued in its usual cold. The day following the frozen ear was still warm; and two days after it retained its heat and thickness, which continued for many days after.

About a week after this, the mixture being the same as the former, I introduced both ears of the same rabbit through the hole, and froze them both: the found one however froze first, probably from its being considerably colder at the beginning. When withdrawn they soon thawed, and both soon became warm, and the fresh ear thickened as the other had done before.

These changes in the parts do not always so quickly take place; for on repeating these experiments on the ear of another rabbit till it became as hard as a board, it was longer in thawing than in the former experiment, and much longer before it became warm; however in about two hours it became a little warm, and the day following it was very warm and thickened.

In the spring 1776, I observed that the cocks I had in the country had their combs smooth with an even edge, and not so broad as formerly, appearing as if near one half of them had been cut off. Having inquired into the cause of this, my servant told me, that it had been common in that winter during the hard frost. He observed, that they had become in part dead, and at last dropped off: also, that the comb of one cock had dropped entirely off; this I did not see, as by accident he burnt himself to death. I naturally imputed this effect to the combs having been frozen in the time of the severe frost; and having, consequently, lost the life of that part by this operation. I endeavoured to try the solidity of this reasoning by experiment.

I attempted

I attempted to freeze the comb of a very large young cock (which was of a considerable breadth) but could only freeze the serrated edges (which processes were full half an inch long); the comb itself being very thick and warm resisted the cold. The frozen parts became white and hard; and when I cut off a little bit it did not bleed, nor did the animal show any signs of pain. I next introduced into the cold mixture one of his wattles, which was very broad and thin; it froze very readily: upon thawing both the comb and wattle, they became warm, but were of a purple colour, having lost the transparency which remained in the other parts of the comb and in the other wattle. The wound in the comb now bled freely.

Both comb and wattle recovered perfectly in about a month. The natural colour returned first nearest to the sound parts, increasing gradually till the whole had acquired a healthy appearance.

There was a very material difference in the effect between those fowls, the serrated edges of whose combs I suspected to have been frozen in the winter of 1765-6, for they must have dropped off. The only way in which I can account for this difference is, that in those fowls the parts were kept so long frozen, that the unfrozen or active parts had time to inflame, and had brought about a separation of the frozen parts, treating them exactly as dead, similar to a mortified part; and that before they thawed, the separation was so far completed as to deprive them of further support.

As it is confidently asserted, that fishes are often frozen and come to life again, and as I had never succeeded in any of my experiments of this kind upon whole fishes, I made some partial experiments upon this class of animals; being led to do this by having found a material difference in the result of the experiments made upon the whole animal, and of those made only on parts of the more perfect animals.

I froze the tail of a tench (as high as the anus) which became as hard as a board; when it thawed, that part was whiter than common; and when it moved, the whole tail moved as one piece, and the termination of the frozen part appeared like the joint on which it moved.

On

On the same day I froze the tails of two gold fishes till they became as solid as a piece of wood. They were put into cold water to thaw, and appeared for some days to be very well; but that part of the tails which had been frozen had not the natural colour, and the fins of the tails became ragged. About three weeks after a fur came all over the frozen parts; their tails became lighter, so that the fishes were suspended in the water perpendicularly, and they had almost lost the power of motion; at last they died. The water in which they were kept was New River water, shifted every day, and about ten gallons in quantity.

I made similar experiments upon an order of animals still inferior, viz. common earth-worms.

I first froze the whole of an earth-worm as a standard; when thawed it was perfectly dead.

I then froze the anterior half of another earth-worm; but the whole died.

I next froze the posterior half of an earth-worm; the anterior half lived, and separated itself from the dead part.

From some of these experiments it appears, that the more imperfect animals are capable of having their heat and cold varied very considerably, but not according to the degree of heat or cold of the surrounding medium in which they can support life; for they can live in a cold considerably below the freezing point, and yet the living powers of the animal will not allow their heat to be diminished much beyond 32° ; and whenever the surrounding cold brings them so low, the power of generating heat takes place; and if the cold is continued, the animals exert this power till life is destroyed; after which they freeze, and are immediately capable of admitting any degree of cold.

EXPLANATION

11. 1. 60

112 A

Fig I.



Fig II.



EXPLANATION OF THE PLATE.

A Thermometer which has the scale so constructed as to admit of its being introduced into any cavity that can receive the ball. The scale is moveable; but the freezing point is marked on the stem or glass.

FIGURE I. A front view, exposing the glass stem of the thermometer, through which the divisions marked upon the concave surface of the sliding ivory scale which embraces it are very distinctly seen.

a The freezing point, which is marked upon the stem by a scratch on the glass.

FIGURE II. A side view, showing the degrees marked near the edge of the convex side of the ivory scale.

The thermometer is to be adjusted for measuring high or low degrees of heat, by bringing any number marked upon the scale opposite the freezing point, and counting either upwards or downwards.

PROPOSALS FOR THE RECOVERY OF PERSONS APPARENTLY DROWNED.

HAVING been requested by a principal member of the society established for the recovery of persons apparently drowned, to commit my thoughts on that subject to paper, I readily complied with his request, hoping, that although I have had no opportunities of making actual experiments upon drowned persons, it might be in my power to throw some lights on a subject so closely connected with the inquiries which, for many years, have been my favourite business and amusement. I therefore collected together my observations and experiments relative to the loss and recovery of the actions of life, which I now offer to the public. The practice is new, and has furnished as yet few important and clear facts. If we judge of the question by our general knowledge of the animal œconomy, I am afraid that it is so imperfectly understood, that our reasoning from it alone cannot be relied on : nevertheless, on a subject so interesting to humanity, we must not be idle ; we must throw out our observations, and reason as well as we can from the few data we have, in hopes that the subject, thus put fairly into the hands of the public, may in time, by their united endeavours, become perfectly understood.

I shall consider an animal, apparently drowned, as not dead ; but that only a suspension of the actions of life has taken place.* This,

* The difference between a suspension of the actions of life, and absolute death, is well illustrated by the common snail when drowning. If a snail is immersed in water and kept there, certain voluntary and instinctive actions take place ; but after remaining a certain time covered by the water, all these actions cease ; the animal becomes relaxed, in which state it naturally comes out of the shell, and the body appears large, giving the full size of the animal, but without any motion ; all its actions being suspended, and continue to be so till either the cause of the suspension is removed, or some other stimulus shall bring the parts into action ; but in this state life cannot be preserved for any considerable length of time ; and when the stimulus of death takes place, the whole animal is thrown into action, in which contracted state absolute death is produced. A state of relaxation should therefore (in cases where an universal violence has not been committed) be considered as a criterion of life ; and even in them it should be for some time admitted as a probable reason for supposing life still to exist.

Q 2

probably

probably, is the case in the beginning of all violent deaths, except those caused by lightning, electricity, an universal shock, by which absolute death may be instantaneously produced; or a blow on the stomach which appears to act in the same way, producing absolute death immediately: for in all those cases which have fallen under my observation, the concomitant circumstances have resembled those which attend death caused by lightning or electricity; such as a total and instantaneous privation of sense and motion without convulsions, consequently without any rigor of muscles; and the blood remaining uncoagulated; differing entirely in these respects from what appears in persons deprived of sense and life by any injury done the brain. It seems only possible to account for this effect of a blow on the stomach, from the connection subsisting between this viscus and every part of the body, at least with vital parts; the blow most probably producing instant death in that organ, in consequence of which the whole animal dies.^a

That I may more fully explain my ideas upon this subject, it will be necessary to state some propositions.

First, that so long as the animal retains the powers, though deprived of the action of life, the cause of that privation may frequently be removed; but, when the powers of life are destroyed, the action ceases to be recoverable. Secondly, it is necessary to mention that I consider part of the living principle as inherent in the blood.^b The last proposition I have to establish is, that the stomach sympathizes with every part of an

^a I should consider the situation of a person drowned to be similar to that of a person in a trance. In both the action of life is suspended, without the power being destroyed; but I am inclined to believe, that a greater proportion of persons recover from trances than from drowning; because a trance is the natural effect of a disposition in the person to have the action of life suspended for a time; but drowning being produced by violence, the suspension will more frequently last for ever, unless the power of life is roused to action by some applications of art.

^b That the living principle is inherent in the blood, is a doctrine which the nature of this account will not allow me to discuss: thus much however it may be proper to say, that it is founded on the results of many observations and experiments. But it may be thought necessary here to give a definition of what I call the living principle: so far as I have used the term, I mean to express that principle which preserves the body from dissolution with or without action, and is the cause of all its actions.

animal,

animal, and that every part sympathizes with the stomach; therefore, whatever acts upon the stomach as a cordial, or rouses its natural and healthy actions, and whatever affects it, so as to produce debility, has an immediate effect upon every part of the body. This sympathy is strongest with the vital parts. Besides this universal sympathy between the stomach and all parts of the body, there are peculiar sympathies; for instance, the heart sympathizes immediately with the lungs. If any thing is received into the lungs, which is a poison to animal life, such as inflammable air, volatile vitriolic acid, and many other well known substances, the motion of the heart immediately ceases, much sooner than if the trachea had been tied; and from experiments it appears, that any thing salutary to life, applied to the lungs, will restore the heart's action after it has been at rest some time.

I shall divide violent deaths into three kinds. First, where a stop is only put to the action of life in the animal, but without any irreparable injury to a vital part; which action, if not restored in a certain time, will be irrecoverably lost. The length of that time is subject to considerable variation, probably depending on circumstances with which we are at present unacquainted. The second is, where an injury is done to a vital part; as by taking away blood till the powers of action are lost; or by a wound or pressure on the brain or spinal marrow, sufficient life remaining in the solids, if actions could be restored to the vital parts. The third is, where absolute death instantly takes place in every part, as is often the case in strokes of lightning; in the common method of killing eels, by throwing them on some hard substance, in such manner as that the whole length of the animal shall receive the shock at the same instant; and, as I believe, happens by a blow on the stomach; in all which cases the muscles remain flexible.*

How far that may be strictly considered as a violent death, which is caused by affections of the mind, I will not pretend to say; but if it is to

* On the other hand, when an eel is killed by chopping it into a number of pieces, the powers of life are by those means roused into action; and, as every part dies in that active state, every part is found stiff after death. This explains the custom of cutting fish into pieces while yet alive, in order to make them hard, usually known by the name of crimping.

have

have a place in that class, it must be ranked with those which happen from lightning, and a blow on the stomach : and in most cases of persons drowned, I can easily conceive the mind to be so much affected, prior to the immersion and in the moment immediately succeeding it, as to make a material difference in the power of recovery.

The present consideration is, which of the kinds of violent death drowning comes under ? I suppose it most commonly comes under the first ; and upon that ground I shall principally consider the subject.

The loss of motion in drowning seems to arise from the loss of respiration, and the immediate effects which this has upon the other vital motions of the animal : except what may have arisen from the affections of the mind ; however, the privation of breathing appears to be the first cause ; and the heart's motion ceasing, to be the second or consequent ; therefore most probably the restoration of breathing is all that is necessary to restore the heart's motion : for if a sufficiency of life still exists to produce that effect, we may suppose every part equally ready to move the very instant in which the action of the heart takes place, their actions depending so much upon it. What makes it very probable, that in recovering persons drowned, the principle effect depends upon air being thrown into the lungs, is, what happens in the birth of children, when too much time has been spent after the interruption of that life which is peculiar to the fetus ; they then lose altogether the disposition for the new life ; and in such cases there being a total suspension of the actions of life, the child remains to all appearance dead, and would die, if air were not thrown into its lungs, and by this means the first principle of action restored. To put this in a still clearer light, I will give the result of some experiments which I made in the year 1755 upon a dog.

A pair of double bellows were provided, constructed in such a manner as by one action to throw fresh air into the lungs, and by another to suck out again the air which had been thrown in by the former, without mixing them together. The muzzle of these bellows was fixed into the trachea of a dog, and by working them he was kept perfectly alive. While this artificial breathing was going on, I took off the sternum of the dog, and exposed the lungs and heart ; the heart continued to act as before,

before, only the frequency of its action was considerably increased. I then stopped the motion of the bellows, and the heart became gradually weaker and less frequent in its contraction, till it left off moving altogether: by renewing my operation, the heart begun again to move, at first very faintly, and with longer intermissions; but by continuing the artificial breathing its motion became as frequent and as strong as before. This process I repeated upon the same dog ten times, sometimes stopping for five, eight, or ten minutes. I observed that every time I left off working the bellows, the heart became extremely turgid with blood, and the blood in the left side became as dark as that in the right; which was not the case when the bellows were working. These situations of the animal appear to me exactly similar to drowning.

The loss of life in drowned persons has been accounted for, by supposing that the blood rendered unfit by want of the action of the air in respiration, is sent in that vitiated state to the brain and other vital parts, by which means the nerves lose their effect upon the heart, and the heart in consequence its motion. This however I am fully convinced is false: first, from the experiments on the dog, in whose case a large column of bad blood, viz. all that was contained in the heart and pulmonary veins was pushed forward without any ill effect being produced; and next, from the recovery of drowned persons and still-born children, which, under such circumstances, never could happen, unless a change of the blood could take place in the brain, prior to the restoration of the heart's motion: therefore the heart's motion must depend immediately upon the application of such air to the lungs, and not upon the effects which air has upon the blood, and which that blood has upon the vital parts. These are only secondary operations in the animal œconomy. However, if the affections of the mind have had any share in the cessation of actions in the heart, that will not be so easily restored as it would otherwise be: therefore in our attempts to recover persons drowned, it might be proper to inquire if there had been time sufficient for the person to form any idea of his situation, previous to his being plunged into the water. It is more than probable, in such a case, that the agitated state of mind might assist in killing him; and I should very much doubt the probability of recovering such

such a person. In the history of those who have, and who have not been recovered, could the difference be assigned to any such cause, it might lead to something useful.

It frequently happens in the case of drowning, that assistance cannot be procured till a considerable time after the accident; every moment of which delay renders recovery more precarious, the chances of which are not only diminished in the parts where the first powers of action principally reside, but also in every other part of the body.

In offering my sentiments on the method of treating persons who are apparently drowned, I shall say first, what I would recommend to have done; secondly, what I would wish might be avoided.

When assistance is called in, soon after the immersion, perhaps blowing air into the lungs may be sufficient to effect a recovery.* But if a considerable time, such as an hour, has been lost, this will seldom be sufficient; the heart, in all probability, having by this time lost its nice connection with the lungs. It will therefore be proper to apply such stimulating medicines, as the vapour of volatile alkali, mixed with the air; which may easily be done, by holding spirits of hartshorn in a cup under the receiver of the bellows. I would advise the air and volatile alkali to be thrown in by the nose, rather than the mouth, as the last mode of administering, by producing sickness, is more likely to depress than rouse the living principle. It will be still better if it can be done by both nostrils, as applications of this kind to the olfactory nerves are known to rouse the living principle and put the muscles of respiration into action, and are therefore likely to excite the action of the heart: Besides affections of these nerves more immediately affect the living principle, for while a strong smell of very sweet flowers, as orange flowers, shall in many cause fainting, the application of vinegar will immediately restore the powers to action again. All perfumes in which there is some acid, rather rouses than depresses, as the sweet-brier, essence of lemon, &c. If during

* Perhaps the deplogified air, described by Dr. Priestley, may prove more efficacious than common air. It is easily procured, and may be preserved in bottles or bladders for that purpose.

the

the operation of the bellows, the larynx be gently pressed against the œsophagus and spine, it will prevent the stomach and intestines being too much distended by the air, and leave room for the application of more effectual stimuli to those parts. This pressure however must be conducted with judgment and caution, so that the trachea and the aperture into the larynx may both be left perfectly free. While this business is going on, an assistant should prepare bed-cloaths, carefully brought to the proper degree of heat. I consider heat as congenial with the living principle; increasing the necessity of action it increases action: cold, on the other hand, lessens the necessity, and of course the action is diminished; to a due proportion of heat, therefore the living principle owes its vigour.

From observations and experiments it appears to be a law of nature in animal bodies, that the degree of external heat should bear a proportion to the quantity of life; as it is weakened, this proportion requires great accuracy in the adjustment; while greater powers of life allow it greater latitudes.*

I was led to make these observations by attending to persons who are frost-bitten; the effect of cold in this case being that of lessening the living principle. The powers of action remain as perfect as ever, only weakened; and heat is the only thing wanting to put these powers into action; yet heat must at first be gradually applied, and proportioned to the quantity of the living principle; but as that increases you may increase the degree of heat. If this method is not observed, and too great a degree of heat is at first applied, the person or part loses entirely the living principle, and mortification ensues. This process invariably takes place with regard to men. The same thing, I am convinced, happens to other animals. If an eel, for instance, is exposed to a degree of cold sufficiently intense to benumb it till the remains of life are scarcely perceptible, and still retained in a cold of about 40°; this small proportion of living principle will continue for a considerable time without diminution or increase; but

* It is upon these principles that cold air is found of so much service to people who are reduced by disease, as the confluent smallpox, and fevers, by diminishing heat in proportion to the diminution of life; or lessening the necessity of the body's producing its own cold.

if the animal is afterwards placed in a heat about 60° , after showing strong signs of returning life, it will die in a few minutes. Nor is this circumstance peculiar to the diminution of life by cold. The same phenomena take place in animals who have been very much reduced by hunger.

If a lizard, or snake, when it goes to its autumnal hiding place, is not sufficiently fat, the living powers become, before the season permits it to come out, very considerably weakened, perhaps so much as not to be again restored. If animals, in such a state, are exposed to the sun's rays, or placed in any situation which by its warmth would give vigour to those of the same kind, possessed of a larger share of life, they will immediately show signs of increased life, but quickly sink under the experiment and die; while others, reduced to the same degree of weakness, as far as appearances can discover, will live for many weeks, if kept in a degree of cold proportioned to the quantity of life they possess.

I observed many years ago, in some of the colder parts of this island, that when intense cold had forced blackbirds or thrushes to take shelter in out-houses, any of them that had been caught, and from an ill-judged compassion exposed to a considerable degree of warmth, died very soon. The reason of this I did not then understand; but I am now satisfied that it was owing, as in other instances, to the degree of heat being increased too suddenly for the proportion of life remaining in the animal.

From these facts it appears, that warmth causes a greater exertion of the living powers than cold; and that an animal in a weakly state may be obliged by it to exert a quantity of the action of life sufficient to destroy the very powers themselves.* The same effects probably take place even in perfect health. It appears from experiments made in a heated room, that a person in health, exposed to a great degree of heat, found the actions of life accelerated so much as to produce at last faintness and debility.†

If bed-cloaths are put over the drowned person so as scarce to touch him, steam of volatile alkali, or of warm balsams and essential oils, may

* It is upon this principle that parts mortify in consequence of inflammation.

† Vide Phil. Trans. for the year 1775, vol. 65. p. 111.

be thrown under so as to come in contact with many parts of his body. It will certainly prove advantageous if the same steams can be conveyed into the stomach, as that seat of universal sympathy will be roused by such means. This may be done by a hollow bougie and a syringe; but the operation should be performed with all possible expedition, because the instrument, by continuing in the mouth, may produce sickness, an effect I should chuse to avoid. Some of the stimulating substances, which are of a warm nature, and have an immediate effect, may be thrown into the stomach in a fluid state, viz. as spirits of hartshorn, peppermint-water, juice of horse-raddish, and many others which produce a more lasting stimulus, as balsams and turpentine, which are found to quicken the pulse of a man in health; but the quantity must be small, as they have a tendency to produce sickness. The same steam and substances should also be thrown up by the anus. The process recommended under the first head of treatment should still be continued, while that recommended under the second is putting in practice, as the last is only an auxiliary to the first. The first, in many cases, may succeed alone; but the second without the first must, I think, always fail where the powers of life are considerably weakened. Motion may possibly be of service, it may at least be tried; but, as it has less effect than any other of the usually prescribed stimuli, it should be the last part of the process.* I would recommend to the operator the same care in regulating the proportion of every one of these methods, as I did before in the application of heat; as every one of them may possibly have the same property of entirely destroying the feeble action which they have excited, if administered in too great a quantity; instead therefore of increasing and hastening the operations on the first signs of returning life being observed, as is usually done, I should wish them to be lessened, that their increase afterwards may be directed,

* Electricity has been known to be of service, and should be tried when other methods have failed. It is probably the only method we have of immediately stimulating the heart; all other methods being more by sympathy. I have not mentioned injecting stimulating substances directly into the veins, though it might be supposed a proper expedient; because, in looking over my experiments on that subject, I found none where animal life received increase by that method.

as nearly as possible, by the quantity of powers as they arise. As the heart is commonly the last part that ceases to act, it is probably the first part that takes on the action of recovery. When it begins to move, I would advise lessening the application of air to the lungs, and enjoin observing with great attention when the muscles of respiration begin to act, that our endeavours may not interfere with their natural exertions; yet that we may be still ready to assist. I would by all means discourage blood-letting; which I think weakens the animal principle, and life itself, consequently lessens both the powers and dispositions to action: and I would advise to be careful not to call forth any disposition that might depress, by introducing any thing into the stomach, which ordinarily creates nausea, as that also will have a similar effect, except it can be carried so far as to relieve itself by exciting vomiting, and would therefore avoid throwing any thing in by the anus which is likely to produce an evacuation that way, as every such evacuation also tends to lessen the animal powers: I have purposely avoided speaking of the fumes of tobacco, which always produce sickness or purging, according as they are applied.

Whoever is appointed for the purposes of recovering drowned persons, should have an assistant, well acquainted with the methods intended to be made use of; that while the one is going on with the first and most simple methods, the other may be preparing what else may be necessary, so that no time may be lost between the operations; and the more so, as the first means recommended, will, in all cases, assist the second, and both together may often be attended with success, though each separately might have failed.

A proper apparatus is also essentially necessary to the institution, a description of which I here annex. First, a pair of bellows, so contrived with two separate cavities, that by expanding them, when applied to the nostrils or mouth of a patient, one cavity may be filled with the common air, and the other with air sucked out from the lungs; and by shutting them again, the common air may be thrown into the lungs, and that which is sucked out of the lungs be discharged into the room. The pipe of these should be flexible, in length a foot or a foot and a half, and at least three-eighths of an inch in width; by this the artificial breathing may

may be continued, while the other operations, except the application of the stimuli to the stomach, are going on, which cannot conveniently be done if the muzzle of the bellows be introduced into the nose. The end next the nose should be double, and applied to both nostrils. Secondly, a syringe, with a hollow bougie, or flexible catheter, of sufficient length to go into the stomach, and convey any stimulating matter into it, without affecting the lungs. Thirdly, a pair of small bellows, such as are commonly used in throwing fumes of tobacco up the anus, by which stimulating fluids, or even fumes may be thrown in.

I shall conclude this account by proposing, that all who are employed in this practice be particularly required to keep an accurate journal of the means used, and the degree of success attending them; whence we may be furnished with facts sufficient to enable us to draw conclusions, on which a certain practice may hereafter be established.

ON

ON THE STRUCTURE OF THE PLACENTA.

THE connection between the mother and fœtus in the human subject, has in every age, in which science has been cultivated, called forth the attention of the anatomist, the physiologist, and even the philosopher; but both that connection, and the structure of the parts which form the connection, were unknown until about the year 1754. The subject is certainly most interesting, and the discovery important; and it is my intention, in the following pages, to give such an account of it as I hope may be acceptable to the public;* while, at the same time, I establish my own claim to the discovery. But that I may not seem to arrogate to myself more merit than I am entitled to, let me, in justice to another person, relate what follows.

The late indefatigable Dr. Mc. Kenzie, about the month of May 1754, when assistant to Dr. Smellie, having procured the body of a pregnant woman, who had died undelivered at the full term, had injected both the veins and arteries with particular success; the veins being filled with yellow, the arteries with red.^b

Having opened the abdomen, and exposed the uterus; he made an incision into the fore part, quite through its substance, and came to somewhat having the appearance of an irregular mass of injected matter, which afterwards proved to be the placenta. This appearance being new, he stopped, and greatly obliged me, by desiring my attendance to examine the parts, in which there appeared something so uncommon. This examination was made in his presence, and in the presence of several other

* This paper was read at the Royal Society; but as the facts had, before that time, been given to the public, it was not published in the Philosophical Transactions.

^b Dr. Mc. Kenzie being then an assistant to the late Dr. Smellie, his procuring and dissecting this woman, without Dr. Smellie's knowledge, was the cause of a separation between them: for the leading steps to such a discovery could not be kept a secret. The winter following, Dr. Mc. Kenzie began to teach midwifery in the Borough of Southwark.

gentlemen

gentlemen whose names I have now forgotten ; but I have reason to believe that some are settled in this country, and I hope will have an opportunity of perusing this publication.*

I first raised, with great care, part of the uterus from the irregular mass above mentioned ; in doing which I observed regular pieces of wax passing obliquely between it and the uterus, which broke off, leaving part upon this mass ; and when they were attentively examined, towards the uterus, plainly appeared to be a continuation of the veins passing from it to this substance or placenta.

I likewise observed other vessels, about the size of a crow-quill, passing in the same manner, although not so obliquely ; these also broke upon separating the placenta and uterus, leaving a small portion on the surface of the placenta ; and on examination they were discovered to be continuations of the arteries of the uterus. My next step was to trace these vessels into the substance of what appeared placenta, which I first attempted in a vein ; but that soon lost the regularity of a vessel, by terminating at once upon the surface of the placenta in a very fine spongy substance ; the interstices of which were filled with the yellow injected matter. This termination being new, I repeated the same kind of examination on other veins, which always led me to the same terminations, never entering the substance of the placenta in the form of a vessel. I

* If I should be so fortunate as to have this publication fall into any of those gentlemen's hands, I hope they will favour me with their opinion of my state of the facts, which led to the discovery.

It may be suspected by some, (but none I hope to whom I have the pleasure of being known) that I am not doing Dr. Mc. Kenzie justice, and am perhaps suppressing some part of that share of the discovery to which he is entitled. This idea, (if ever it should arise) I may probably not be able to remove ; but I hope it will also be seen, that I myself have given rise to it ; believing, if I had been so inclined, that I might have suppressed Dr. Mc. Kenzie's name altogether, without ever running the hazard of being detected. I was indeed so tenacious of my claim to the discovery, that I wrote this account in Dr. Mc. Kenzie's life-time, with a design to publish it ; and often communicated my intentions to Dr. George Fordyce, who I knew was very intimate with the Doctor, in consequence of both teaching in the same place, and making many experiments together ; therefore he is a kind of collateral witness, that what I now publish is the same account which I gave in Dr. Mc. Kenzie's life-time.

next examined the arteries, and tracing them in the same manner toward the placenta, found that they made a twist, or close spiral turn upon themselves, and then were lost on its surface. On a more attentive view, I perceived that they terminated in the same way as the veins; for opposite to the mouth of the artery, the spongy substance of the placenta was readily observed, and was intermixed with the red injection.

Upon cutting into the placenta, I discovered in many places of its substance, yellow injection; in others red, and in many others these two colours mixed. This substance of the placenta, now filled with injection, had nothing of the vascular appearance, nor that of extravasation, but had a regularity in its form which showed it to be a natural cellular structure, fitted to be a reservoir for blood.

In some of the veins leading from the placenta to the uterus, I perceived that the red injection of the arteries, (which had been first injected) had passed into them out of the substance of the placenta, mixing itself with the yellow injection. I also observed, that the spongy chorion, called the decidua, by Dr. Hunter, was very vascular, its vessels coming from and returning to the uterus, being filled with the different coloured injections.

After having considered these appearances, it was not difficult for me to determine the real structure of the placenta and course of the blood in these parts: but the company, prejudiced in favour of former theories, combated my opinion; and it was even disputed, whether or not these curling arteries could carry red blood. After having dissected the uterus, with the placenta and membranes, and made the whole into preparations, tending to show the above facts, I returned home in the evening, and communicated what I had discovered to my brother, Dr. Hunter, who at first treated it and me with good humoured raillery; but on going with me to Dr. Mc. Kenzie's, was soon convinced. Some of the parts were given to him, which he afterwards showed at his lectures, and probably they still remain in his collection.

Soon after this time, Dr. Hunter and I procured several placentas, to see if after delivery the termination of the veins, and the curling arteries, could be observed: they were discernible almost in every one; and by

S

pushing

pushing a pipe into the placenta, we could fill not only its whole substance, but also the vessels on that surface which was attached to the uterus.

The facts being now ascertained, and universally acknowledged, I consider myself as having a just claim to the discovery of the structure of the placenta, and its communication with the uterus; together with the use arising from such structure and communication, and of having first demonstrated the vascularity of the spongy chorion.

It is not necessary at present to enter into the various opinions which have been formed on this subject; because, whatever they were, they could not be just, the structure of the parts not being known: neither shall I endeavour to give a complete description of all the parts immediately connected with uterine gestation, but shall content myself with describing the structure of the placenta, as far as it has any relation to the uterus and child; and with explaining the connection between the two; leaving the reader to examine what has been said upon this subject by others, especially by Dr. Hunter, in that very accurate and elaborate work which he has published on the Gravid Uterus, in which he has minutely described, and accurately delineated the parts, without mentioning the mode of discovery.

The necessary connection subsisting in all animals between the mother and foetus, for the nourishment of the latter, as far as I know, takes place in two ways. In some it is continued, and subsists through the whole term of gestation; in others the union is soon dissolved, but an apparatus is provided, which at once furnishes what is sufficient for the support of the animal till it comes forth.

The first of these are the viviparous, the second the oviparous animals, both of which admit of great variety in the modes by which they produce the same effect.* In the first division is included the human species,

* It may be remarked here, that the oviparous admit of being distinguished into two classes, one where the egg is hatched in the belly, as in the viper, which has been commonly called viviparous; the others, where the eggs have been first laid and then hatched, which is the class commonly called oviparous, such as all the bird tribe, and many others, as snakes, lizards, &c.

which

which alone will engage our present attention. But before I describe this connection, it may be necessary that the reader should understand my idea of generation: I shall therefore refer him to what I have said upon that subject in my account of the free martin.*

In the human species the anatomical structure of the mother and embryo, relative to gestation, being well known, it will only be necessary fully to describe the nature of that connection between them, which is formed by the intermediate substance, called placenta. For this purpose we must first consider the placenta as a common part; next, the uterus, as belonging to the mother, yet having an immediate connection with the placenta, from which the nourishment of the fœtus is to be derived; which will lead us lastly to a consideration of those peculiarities by which the fœtus is to receive its nourishment, and that constitute its immediate communication likewise with the placenta. It is the structure of this intermediate substance, and its connection with the child and the uterus of the mother, which have hitherto been so little understood; and without an accurate knowledge of which, it was impossible any just idea could be formed of its functions.

The placenta is a mass lying nearly in contact with the uterus; indeed it may in some degree be said to be in continuity with a part of its internal surface. On the side applied to the uterus the placenta is lobulated, having deep irregular fissures; but all these lobes are united into one uniform surface next to the child, on which its umbilical vessels ramify. When we cut into the placenta, its whole substance appears to be little else than a net-work, or spongy mass, through which the blood vessels of the fœtus ramify, and indeed it seems to be principally formed by the ramifications of those vessels; exhibiting hardly any appearance of connecting membrane: but we can hardly suppose it to be without such a membrane, as there is so much regularity in its texture. The cells, or interstices of each lobe communicate with one another, even much more freely than those of the cellular membrane in any other part of the body; so that whatever fluid will pass in at one part, readily diffuses itself through

* Vide page 45.

the whole mass of placenta, and all the cells have a communication at the common base.

This structure of the placenta, its reciprocal communication with the two bodies with which it is immediately connected, and the use arising from this arrangement, form the union between the mother and fœtus for the support of the latter. Prior to the time I have mentioned above, anatomists seem to have been wholly unacquainted with this structure of placenta. By notes taken from Dr. Hunter's lectures, in the winter, 1755-6, it appears that he expressed himself in the following manner.* "The substance of the placenta is a fleshy mass, which seems to be formed entirely of the vessels of the umbilical rope." In another part, mentioning the appearances when injected, he says, "and upon a slight putrefaction coming on, you will find the whole appearing like a mass of vessels"; then says, "there is always a white uninjected substance between the vessels, but whether lymphatics or what I cannot tell." This uninjected substance, mentioned by Dr. Hunter, is what forms the cellular structure.

The placenta seems to be principally composed of the ramifications of the vessels of the embryo, and may have been originally formed in consequence of those next to the uterus laying hold by a species of animal attraction of the coagulable lymph which lines the uterus. This might take place in a manner resembling what happens when the root of a plant spreads on the surface of moist bodies; with this difference, that in the present instance the vessels form the substance through which they ramify, as in the case of granulations.

At the time, or very probably before the female seed enters the uterus, coagulable lymph, from the blood of the mother, is thrown out every where on its inner surface, either from the stimulus of impregnation taking place in the ovarium, or in consequence of the seed being expelled from it. When the seed has entered the uterus, it attaches itself to that

* These quotations were taken from Mr. Gallie's MS. of Dr. Hunter's lectures, who is one of the gentlemen that favoured Dr. Hunter, upon a former occasion, with the same use of his notes. Vide Dr. Hunter's Commentaries.

lymph

lymph, by which it becomes covered and immediately surrounded.* This coagulable lymph forms a soft pulpy membrane, the decidua, which is, I believe, peculiar to the human species, and to monkeys, having never found it in any other animal. That part which covers the feed or fœtus, where it is not immediately attached to the uterus, and likewise forms a membrane, was discovered by Dr. Hunter, and is by him called decidua reflexa. The whole of this coagulable lymph continues to be a living part for the time; the vessels of the uterus ramify upon it; and where the vessels of the fœtus form the placenta, there the vessels of the uterus, after passing through the decidua, open into the cellular substance of the placenta, as before described. As this membrane lines the uterus and covers the feed, it is stretched out, and becomes thinner and thinner, as the uterus is distended by the fœtus growing larger, especially that part of it, called decidua reflexa, which covers the fœtus, as there it cannot possibly acquire any new matter, except we could suppose that the fœtus assisted in the formation of it. This membrane is most distinct where it covers the chorion; for where it covers the placenta it is blended with coagula in the great veins that pass obliquely through it, more especially all round the edge where innumerable large veins come out; but the chorion and decidua can be easily distinguished from one another, the decidua being less elastic.

From the description now given, I think we are justified in supposing the placenta to be formed entirely by the fœtus, and the decidua to be a production of the mother; and an additional proof of both these may be drawn from the circumstance of the decidua passing between the placenta and uterus. For if the vessels of the fœtus branched into a part of the decidua, we might conceive the whole placenta to be formed from that exudation; the portion of it where the vessels had ramified, like the roots of a plant, becoming thicker than the rest, and forming the placenta. If that were the case, this membrana decidua, when traced from parts distinct, and at a distance from the placenta, should be plainly seen

* This is exactly similar to another operation in the animal economy. If an extraneous living part is introduced into any cavity, it will be immediately enclosed with coagulable lymph. Thus we find worms inclosed, hydatids detached, and afterwards inclosed.

passing

passing into its substance all round at the edges, as a continuation of it. But the fact is quite otherways; for the decidua can be distinctly traced between the placenta and uterus, hardly ever passing between the lobuli: the vessels of the fœtus never entering into it, and of course none of them ever coming in absolute contact with the uterus.

The vessels of the fœtus adhering, by the intervention of the decidua, to a certain space of the uterus when both are yet small, as the uterus increases in every part of its surface during the time of uterine gestation, we must suppose that this surface of adhesion increases also; and that by the elongation of those vessels of the fœtus in every direction, this substance should likewise be increased in every direction: this is in some degree the case, yet the placenta does not occupy so much of the enlarged surface of the uterus as one at first would expect.

The vessels of the uterus in the time of the gestation, are increased in size nearly in a proportion equal to the increased circumference of the uterus, and consequently in a proportion much greater than the real increase of its substance. But when we reflect that the uterus ought not to be considered as hollow, but as a body nearly solid, on account of its contents, which derive support from this source; and that a much greater quantity of blood must necessarily pass than what is required for the support of the viscus itself, we cannot be at a loss to account for the greatly increased size of its vessels.

The arteries of the uterus which are not immediately employed in conveying nourishment to it, go on towards the placenta, and proceeding obliquely between it and the uterus, pass through the decidua without ramifying; just before they enter the placenta, making two or three close spiral turns upon themselves, they open at once into its spongy substance without any diminution of size, and without passing beyond the surface as above described. The intention of these spiral turns would appear to be that of diminishing the force of the circulation as it approaches the spongy substance of the placenta, and is a structure which must lessen the quick motion of the blood in a part where a quick motion of this fluid was not wanted. The size of these curling arteries at this termination is about that of a crow's quill.

The

The veins of the uterus appropriated to bring back the blood from the placenta, commence from this spongy substance by such wide beginnings, as are more than equal to the size of the veins themselves. These veins pass obliquely through the decidua to the uterus, enter its substance obliquely, and immediately communicate with the proper veins of the uterus. The area of those veins bear no proportion to their circumference, the veins being very much flattened.

This structure of parts points out at once the motion of the blood in the placenta; but as this is a fact but lately ascertained, a just idea may perhaps be conveyed by saying, that it is similar, as far as we yet know, to the blood's motion through the cavernous substance of the penis.

The blood, detached from the common circulation of the mother, moves through the placenta of the fetus; and is then returned back into the course of the circulation of the mother to pass on to the heart.

This structure of the placenta, and its communication with the uterus, leads us a step further in our knowledge of the connection between the mother and fetus; the blood of the mother must pass freely into the substance of the placenta, and the placenta most probably will be constantly filled; the turgidity of which will assist to squeeze the blood into the mouths of the veins of the uterus, that it may again pass into the common circulation of the mother: and as the interstices of the placenta are of much greater extent than the arteries which convey the blood, the motion of the blood in that part must be so much diminished as almost to approach to stagnation; so far and no further does the mother appear to be concerned in this connection.

The fetus has a communication with the placenta of another kind. The arteries from the fetus pass out to a considerable length, under the name of the umbilical chord, and when they arrive at the placenta, ramify upon its surface, sending into its substance branches which pass through it, and divide into smaller and smaller, till at last they terminate in veins; these uniting become larger and larger, and end in one, which at last terminates in the proper circulation of the fetus.

This course of vessels, and the blood's motion in them, is similar to the course of the vessels and the motion of the blood in other parts of the body.

OBSERVATIONS

OBSERVATIONS ON THE PLACENTA OF THE MONKEY.

MONKEYS always copulate backwards; this is performed sometimes when the female is standing on all-fours; and at other times the male brings her between his thighs when he is sitting, holding her with his fore paws.

The female has her regular periods for the male, but she has commonly too much complaisance ever to refuse him. They carry this still further, for they receive the male when with young, even when pretty far gone; at least this was the case with the one I am going to give an account of.

A female monkey, belonging to Mr. Enderbay, in the summer 1782, had frequently taken the male. The keeper observed that after the 21st of June she became less lively than usual, although it was not suspected that she had conceived. However, some time after, she appeared to be bigger in the belly, which created a suspicion of her being with young. Great attention was paid to her, and great care was taken of her. She went on gradually increasing in size, and at last something was observed to move in her belly at particular times, and the motion could even be felt through the abdominal muscles. She became indolent, and did not like to leap or perform her usual feats of activity. Towards the latter part of the time they perceived the breast and nipple to have become rather fuller; and that a kind of water could be squeezed out at the nipple. Some time before she brought forth, she became red about the hips and posteriors; which redness extended to the inside of the thighs, and it was now certain she was with young. I desired that she might be particularly attended to when there were signs of approaching delivery, both on her own account and that of the young one, and requested the after-birth might be carefully preserved, as that part would assist to ascertain the mode of uterine gestation. These directions were attentively followed; and when in labour it was observed, that she had regular pains; that when the young one was in part come into the world, she assisted herself with her fore paws; and that it came with the hind parts first. This happened

happened on the 15th of December 1782, in all about six months after conception; and when she brought forth her young one, it showed signs of life, but died immediately, owing probably to the unfavourable mode of its being brought into the world. When delivered, she took the young one up, and although it was dead, clasped it to her breast.

The after-birth was preserved entire, and was perfectly fit for examination. It consisted of placenta, with the membranes and navel string, which all very much resembled the corresponding parts in the human subject, as will now be described.

The placenta had the appearance of being divided into two oblong bodies, united by their edges, each terminating in an obtuse point at the other end, which were of course at some little distance from one another.

It is probable, that these two points were placed towards the openings of the Fallopiian tubes, where the uterus assumes a form resembling two obtuse horns.

The two lobes above mentioned, were made up of smaller ones, united closely at their edges, which were more apparent and distinct at some parts than at others. Some of these lobes were divided by fissures which seem to be derived from one centre; while there were others near the edges, passing in a different direction: in which fissures are placed veins or sinuses that receives the blood laterally from the lobes. The substance of the placenta seems to be cellular, as in the human subject; this structure allows a communication to be kept up between different parts of each lobe, and the sinuses allowing of a communication between the different lobes of which the placenta is composed, and the blood passes into the fissures before it enters the veins; in which respect it differs from the human placenta.

The arteries from the uterus, on the surface of the placenta, were visible, but too small to be injected; I cannot therefore say how they terminated in the placenta.

The principal veins in general arose from the fissures beginning from the surface, as in the human placenta; but besides these, there were other small ones, all which we may suppose pass through the decidua and

T

enter

enter the substance of the uterus, most probably in the same way as in the human.

The membranes are the amnios, the chorion, and the membrana decidua. These appear to be very much the same as in the human, except that the decidua is considerably thicker, especially where it passes between the uterus and the placenta.

The navel string in the monkey is not proportionally so long as in the human; and is very much, and very regularly twisted.

There is no urachus, and of course no allantois, not even the small ligament that appears to be a drawing in of the bladder at its attachment to the navel, the bladder here being rounded.

EXPLANATION



EXPLANATION OF THE PLATE.

A Part of a uterus at the ninth month of utero-gestation, with a portion of the placenta, to show the mode in which the blood-vessels of the mother communicate with it.

A The substance of the uterus, separated from the placenta, and turned back.

B The surface of the placenta by which it is attached to the uterus, covered by the decidua.

C The angle of reflection, at which the uterus is turned back upon itself.

D The edge of the placenta.

E The decidua covering the chorion.

Upon the surface of the uterus are to be seen the veins or sinuses, running in an oblique direction, filled with wax, and broken off where they pass through the decidua.

a a a a The arteries injected and broken off as they pass from the uterus to the placenta.

b b b b The continuation of these arteries, which make several spiral turns as they dip into the decidua, and afterwards terminate on the surface of the placenta.

c c c c The veins injected and broken off where they pass into the substance of the uterus.

d d d d The corresponding portions of the same veins, where they pass from the placenta through the decidua.

e e e e The blood-vessels, ramifying upon the decidua, broken off from the uterus.

OBSERVATIONS

OBSERVATIONS ON THE GILLAROO TROUT, COMMONLY CALLED IN IRELAND THE GIZZARD TROUT.

ONE of the digestive organs of this trout being so very remarkable as to have given name to the fish, and to be looked upon as its distinguishing characteristic ; it will be necessary to take a general view of the varieties in the digestive organs of animals, to be able to determine what place the stomach of this particular trout holds among them, and to throw some light upon the question, whether its resemblance to a gizzard be such, as to render the name of gizzard trout a proper appellation. For this purpose let me state some general facts. Food of animals may be divided into two kinds, what does, and what does not, require mastication to facilitate digestion. All animal food is of this latter kind. But grain, and many other substances which serve for aliment, require a previous grinding or trituration ; and therefore animals which live on such food are furnished with organs for that purpose. Granivorous quadrupeds have the two powers, for mastication and digestion, separate or distinct from one another ; the first being executed by a set of teeth of a particular form, which serve as so many grindstones for reducing their food to a powder, before they convey it into the stomach for digestion. When so prepared, it is, with regard to the digestive power, rendered similar to animal food : therefore in many such animals the stomach is similar to that of the carnivorous ; and whenever the stomach in granivorous quadrupeds departs from this general rule, there is a singularity in the operations of digestion. Such birds as live upon food, for the digestion of which trituration is indispensably necessary, have the powers of mastication and digestion united in one part, the gizzard ; which is peculiarly constructed for that purpose. In granivorous birds therefore one single organ answers both to the teeth and stomach of granivorous quadrupeds, and consequently the gizzard alone of birds

T 2

will

will point out the food of the species as clearly as the teeth and stomach together do in those animals in which the two offices of mastication and digestion are not joined together in the same part.

As it appears then to be the difference of the stomachs only, that fits birds for their different kinds of food, it is evident that every gradation of stomach must be found among them, from the true gizzard which is one extreme, to the mere membranous stomach which is the other; since the food of different species is of every different kind, from the hardest grain to the softest animal matter. In consequence of this, it must be as difficult to determine the exact limits of the two different constructions, to which the names of gizzard and stomach specifically belong, as, in any other case, to distinguish proximate steps in the slow and imperceptible gradations of nature.

The two extremes of true gizzard, and membranous stomach, are easily defined; but they run so into each other, that the end of one and the beginning of the other are quite imperceptible. Similar gradations are observed in the food; the kinds suited to the two extremes mixing together in different proportions, adapted to the intermediate states of stomach.

A true gizzard is composed of two strong muscles placed opposite, and acting upon each other, as two broad grindstones. These muscles are joined together at their sides by a middle tendon, into which the muscular fibres are inserted, and which forms the narrow anterior and posterior sides of the flat quadrangular cavity, in which the grinding is performed. The upper end of this cavity is filled up by the termination of the œsophagus, and the beginning of the intestine. The lower end consists of a thin muscular bag connecting the edges of the two muscles together.

By these two softer and flexible substances being thus interposed between the two strong grinding muscles, a double advantage is gained; for whilst one gives an easy passage to the œsophagus and gut, they both act, in some degree, as a hinge, on which the two muscles may be said to move, by means of the middle tendon allowing of a free motion of the grinding surfaces on each other, which is necessary for the comminution of food.

The

The two flat lateral sides of the grinding cavity are lined with a thick horny substance similar to a hard and thick cuticle: the narrow anterior and posterior tendinous parts are also lined with a cuticle, but not so strong as the former: this horny substance is gradually lost at one end in a very thin cuticle, which lines the passages of the œsophagus and intestine for a little way; and at the other end is lost in the same manner in the membranous bag.

The two large muscles may be considered as a pair of jaws, whose teeth are taken in occasionally, being small rough stones or pebbles which the animal swallows: and from the feeling on the tongue, it can distinguish such of these as are proper, from those which are smooth or otherways unfit for the purpose, which last it instantly drops out of its mouth.

Some birds, with gizzards, have a crop also, which serves as a reservoir, and for softening the grain; but as all of them have not this organ, it is not to our present purpose.

There are other animals besides that class of birds, which masticate their food in their stomach, but their teeth are placed there by nature: crabs and lobsters are of this kind.

The gradation from gizzard to stomach is made by the muscular sides becoming weaker and weaker, and the food keeps pace with this change, varying gradually from vegetable to animal. In one point of view therefore food may be considered as a first principle, with respect to which the digestive powers, with their appendages, are as secondary parts, being adapted to and determined by the food, as the primary object.

We find then that in granivorous animals of all sorts, there is an apparatus for the mastication of the food, although of different kinds and differently placed. But in true carnivorous animals of whatever tribe, mastication is not so necessary, and therefore they have no apparatus for that purpose. The teeth of such quadrupeds, as are carnivorous, serve chiefly to procure food and prepare it for deglutition. The same thing holds in the true carnivorous bird, the office of whose beak and talons is to procure the aliment, and fit it for deglutition, corresponding in this respect to the teeth of the others. Applying this to fish, it seems, at first sight, that there is no occasion in them for that variety of structure in the digestive

digestive organs, which is found in the before mentioned quadrupeds and birds; the food of fish being principally of one sort, namely, animal, which however with regard to the digestive powers, is to be distinguished into two kinds, viz. common soft fish and shell-fish. Such fish as live on the first kind, have like the carnivorous quadrupeds and birds, no apparatus for mastication; their teeth being intended merely for catching the food and fitting it to be swallowed. But the shells of the second kind of food render some degree of masticating power necessary, and accordingly we find in certain fish a structure suited to this purpose.

Thus the mouth of the wolf-fish is almost paved with teeth, by means of which it can break any shells to pieces, and so effectually disengage the food for digestion, that though it lives upon such hard food, the stomach does not differ from that of other fish: the organs of mastication and digestion therefore in this animal exactly correspond to those of many granivorous quadrupeds.

Other fish, on the contrary, approach nearer to the structure of birds, in having their stomach furnished with some degree of masticating power; this in many is very imperfect, compared with the gizzards of fowls, though perhaps the difference is such only as the difference of food will properly allow: for in those fish who have this power, the food being still animal; and in general but imperfectly covered with the shell, it perhaps wants only to be broken; however, in the *bulla lignaria* of Linnaeus, this apparatus is more perfect, consisting of two bones, which we must suppose capable of grinding hard shells; whereas the food of granivorous birds requires to be ground into a kind of meal.

Of all the fish I have seen, the mullet is the clearest instance of this structure; its strong muscular stomach being evidently adapted, like the gizzard of birds, to the two offices of mastication and digestion. The stomach of the fish now before us holds the second place.

But still neither of those stomachs can be justly ranked as gizzards, since they want some of the most essential characters, viz. a power and motion fitted for grinding, and the horny cuticle. The stomach of the Gillaroo trout is however more circumscribed than that of most fish, better adapted for small food, and endued with sufficient strength to break the shells

shells of small shell-fish; which will most probably be best done by having more than one in the stomach at a time, and also by taking pretty large and smooth stones into the stomach, which will answer the purpose of breaking; but not so well that of grinding; nor will they hurt the stomach as they are smooth, when swallowed; but this stomach can scarcely possess any power of grinding, as the whole cavity is lined with a fine villous coat, the internal surface of which appears every where to be digestive, and by no means fitted for mastication.

The stomach of the English trout is exactly of the same species with that of the Gillaroo, but its coat is not so thick by two-thirds.* How far this difference in thickness of stomach is sufficient to make a distinct species, or barely a variety of the same, is only to be determined by experiment.†

The œsophagus in the trout is considerably longer and smaller than in many other classes of fish.

The intestines are similar to those of the salmon, herring, sprat, &c.

The pancreas is appendiculated.‡

The teeth show them to be fish of prey.

So far as we are led to determine by analogy, we must not consider the stomach of this fish as a gizzard, but as a true stomach.

* The English trout swallows shell-fish, and also pretty large smooth stones, which serve as kind of shell-breakers.

† Viz. Take some Gillaroo trout, male and female, and put them into water in which there are no trout, to see if they continue the same.

‡ I chuse to give this name to the pancreas from its appearance.

SOME OBSERVATIONS ON DIGESTION.

THE paper which I formerly presented to the Royal Society, on the stomach being digested after death, and which was published in 1772, in the 62nd volume of the Philosophical Transactions, seems to have attracted the attention of Spallanzani, and others. I shall therefore make some remarks upon the experiments and opinions of those gentlemen; compare them with those of Reaumur, and give some general facts and observations of my own upon digestion, and shall conclude by adding a copy of the above mentioned paper, with the hope that others will take up the subject in a more enlarged point of view, and prosecute an inquiry which is of so much consequence in the investigation of the operations of the animal œconomy. I cannot, at present, spare sufficient time to give my opinions at large on this subject, with all the experiments and observations I have made upon it; but as soon as I have leisure I shall lay them before the public.

The discovery of parts has been a principal object in the researches of the young or practical anatomist; but the connection, arrangement, mode of action, and uses of the whole, or of particular organs, have more commonly been reserved for the consideration of those whose views were extended further; and whose powers of reasoning had been enlarged by habits of observation and inquiry. Curious and speculative men have likewise made attempts in this way, often without being sufficiently acquainted with the structure of the parts they were about to consider; and consequently ignorant of their relations and connections with one another. They have not been contented to speculate concerning those which were most obvious, which might have led to useful knowledge; but directed by what best suited their fancy, they have principally attempted the most obscure and intricate. Generation, or the mode of continuing the species, and digestion, or the means of preserving the individual, have been with them the great objects of inquiry; but it does not appear that they have been very successful. Digestion, as being one of the most important operations of the animal œconomy, and most obvious in its effects, supplies

U

a number

a number of facts to assist in ascertaining its powers; yet little has been hitherto made out towards investigating the various circumstances under which it is performed.

The mode of dividing the food, for the increase of its surface in some animals, suggested one method of explaining the process of digestion; and the secretion of a juice, having the power of converting vegetable and animal matter into a fluid proper for the purposes of nutrition, furnished another. Both these opinions have had their advocates; and while one party contended for a mechanical power, supposed to exist in the gizzard, the other had recourse to a chymical power; and these last considered fermentation as the great agent in digestion: but as they were rather speculative philosophers, than practical anatomists, they have frequently been misled with respect to the very facts and observations whose result was to decide the truth of their opinions. What, for instance, does it explain in digestion, that the force of the gizzard of a turkey is found equal to four hundred and seventy-three pounds? Does it afford a better solution of our doubts, than we should derive from determining the force of the mill that grinds the wheat into flour? Or, on the other hand, will the most correct idea of fermentation enable us to account for the various phenomena in the operation of digestion? But we can have no very high idea of experiments made by gentlemen and *priests*, who, for want of anatomical knowledge, have not been able to pursue their reasoning even beyond the simple experiment itself.

The great object should have been, an endeavour to discover the universal agent in digestion: for the digestive organ is evidently constructed in a different manner in different animals; the mechanical power for the division of the food not being universal; and those gentlemen who considered this power in the gizzard as the immediate cause of digestion, forgot that the same effect was produced in other classes of animals, with a different structure of stomach, by means of the grinding teeth. Thus while the gizzard favoured the theory of the mechanical reasoner, that idea was again destroyed by the membranous structure of the stomach in many animals, which at the same time supplied the chymist with arguments in favour of the process of fermentation.

It

It is indeed a more difficult matter than those gentlemen imagine, to acquire on this subject a knowledge sufficiently accurate, to be able to explain a process so complicated as that of digestion. There are in Nature's operations always two obvious extremes; and the mind of man eagerly adopts that which accords with some principle he is fond of, and with which he is best acquainted; but the intermediate connections and gradations being less striking, do not so forcibly affect the superficial inquirer.

It happens unfortunately that those who from the nature of their education are best qualified to investigate the intricacies, and improve our knowledge of the animal œconomy, are compelled to get their living by the practice of a profession which is constant employment. The only idle professional men are those of the church; and we therefore frequently see them becoming philosophers and physiologists, as it were instinctively, without having had that kind of education which might direct their pursuits. Experiments, it is true, may be made by such men; but they must not be complicated, nor having any immediate relation to a branch of knowledge, with which they cannot be much acquainted; and experiments so made, will seldom go further than perhaps to explain a single fact. They may look through microscopes and examine the red globules of blood; they may view animalculæ and give us a candid relation of what they see; but should not presume to carry their reasoning into a science of which they can know nothing; or hope to throw light on a subject which it is impossible they can understand. It should be remembered, that nothing in nature stands alone; but that every art and science has a relation to some other art or science, and that it requires a knowledge of these others, as far as this connection takes place, to enable us to become perfect in that which engages our particular attention.

These observations are applicable to all those who have made experiments to explain digestion. The mechanical powers being easily understood, those who considered digestion mechanically have in general explained their effects justly, as far as they applied to the gizzard; but their powers of reasoning went no further, and they supposed these effects

to be digestion. But those who took it up chymically being less acquainted with chymistry, and totally ignorant of the principles of the animal œconomy, have erroneously referred the operations of the animal machine to the laws of chymistry.

The first inquirers into digestion were struck only by the extremes, the gizzard, and membranous stomach, paying no regard to the gradations leading from the one to the other; which if properly examined would have assisted them more effectually to explain the functions of the stomach.

Vallisneri, considering the power of the gizzard in one view only, imagined it would be as liable to be affected by the mechanical powers necessary for digestion, as the grain which was to be digested; therefore supposed the existence of a solvent: but he is entitled to no merit from this idea, as the premises are false: however, this opinion of Vallisneri set Reaumur to work, and has been the means of bringing several curious facts to light. His experiments were first made with a view to contradict that idea; and were therefore made upon birds that had gizzards, as best adapted to his purpose. In this pursuit he only attended to those parts of the experiments which best accorded with his own opinion; yet carefully guarded against every possible accident that might affect their accuracy. If trituration was the immediate cause of digestion, his making experiments on the gizzards of birds was unnecessary; it would have been sufficient to have examined the food after it had been masticated by the teeth of animals who have grinders; for the teeth and gizzard answer one and the same purpose: but the circumstance of animals who masticate their food in their mouth, having also a stomach, should have taught, that there was something more in digestion than trituration.

Reaumur's first experiments were made to ascertain the strength of the gizzard, with its effects; to prove that sharp cutting substances, when swallowed, in no way injured its internal coat; and that the common food of the bird was not dissolved when guarded against its action. Yet after all these proofs he seems to doubt, and says, "are we to conclude that grinding alone is sufficient to convert the grain and other aliment into a matter proper for the nutrition of the animal, without undergoing any other

other preparation? Several reasons seem to oppose this; trituration alone might reduce the grain into a flour; but flour alone is not chyle." "From the smell of the aliment (taken from the gizzards of birds) are we not led to conclude that it undergoes a fermentation? This smell may be said to arise from the liquor with which the aliment is mixed; but is it likely that juices do not dispose to fermentation, such substances in which it is so easily excited? Flour made into a paste and fruit, require little more than heat to make them ferment." From these very experiments made with a view to prove that digestion is carried on by trituration, Reaumur was led to suppose a solvent. But as there are some birds whose stomachs do not seem sufficiently strong to have the power of trituration, he selected the buzzard, as being of that kind, and the fittest, for the subject of his experiments, from the circumstance of its throwing up whatever is solid and indigestible; therefore without killing the bird, he could know the result, and repeat the experiment as often as he thought necessary.

From the stomach in the buzzard being incapable of trituration, he concluded that a solvent was necessary for digestion; but to preclude all mechanical effects of the stomach, in his experiments, he employed tin tubes filled with meat, which, after the tubes had remained twenty-four hours in the stomach of the buzzard, was reduced to three-fourths of its size was like threads, and was neither putrid, sour, nor volatile, but insipid. On this effect he made his remarks, which are very pertinent. In another experiment which was more accurate and conclusive, he is convinced of the action of a solvent. He then tried the soft bones of young animals, and found they were digested, and that though the hard bones were not acted on so readily; yet by returning the same bones several times into the stomach, they were at last digested.

Reaumur was next anxious to know, if such birds as were intended by nature to live upon meat, could also digest vegetables; but the result was not so satisfactory. He gave bread to his buzzard, which upon being returned had the appearance of having been chewed. He next tried a piece of a ripe pear; which, after having been twenty-four hours in the stomach it had lost some of its weight, and had the appearance of
being

being boiled or baked ; and thence he concludes that its powers are too weak to digest vegetables so as to nourish the animal.

To ascertain the nature of this liquor which had such powers, he tasted the jelly to which the meat and bone had been reduced, conceiving it must be well impregnated with this fluid, but could only distinguish a bitter or saltish taste. To have an opportunity of more fully determining the nature of this solvent, he made his buzzard swallow small tubes filled with sponge, which imbibed fifty grains of this liquor, having the same taste as the jelly, and changing blue paper to a red. He tried the effects of this liquor on meat out of the body, with comparative experiments in water ; and after twenty-four hours, the meat in the water was become putrid ; but that in the liquor from the stomach was only softened, not dissolved. To see how far the analogy held good in membranous stomachs, he gave two bones to a dog, which being killed after twenty-six hours, they were found lessened in size, and become as soft as horn. He found that the stomach of the dog did not alter the shape of any of his tubes.

He conveyed grass and hay, enclosed in tubes, into the stomachs of ruminating animals, which were not digested, but appeared as if macerated.

Let us enumerate the experiments and facts made out by Reaumur.

The gizzard was not hurt by acting upon glass, which it ground to a powder.

The stomach, or gizzard, had hardly any visible motion.

The force of the gizzard was ascertained.

The size of the stones found in the gizzard was in proportion to the size of the bird.

The stomach of a buzzard digested bone ; from which he concluded the gastric juice has a solvent power ; but it did not digest bread, although it acted in a slight degree on fruit.

He made experiments with the gastric juice.

The juice in the ruminating animals produced no effect on hay or grass, when inclosed in tubes.

Reaumur's experiments, although not compleat, yet paved the way for future investigation ; and Spallanzani proceeding on the same ground, has

has confirmed them by his own, and has filled up several blanks not completely made out by Reaumur; for in some instances Reaumur gave up the point too soon, especially in the experiments respecting the buzzard's power of digesting vegetables. Reaumur did not possess general knowledge sufficient to direct him in his pursuits, which necessarily confined him to what he was most master of, the mere making experiments. He was neither an anatomist, nor a physiologist; nor can he be said to have been perfectly just in his description of parts, having considered the crop, and the œsophagus leading from it to the gizzard, as being two distinct stomachs. This however is only to be set down as a piece of anatomical ignorance, not affecting the subject in the least. Spallanzani is also incorrect in his anatomical knowledge; but it must be owned, that his experiments, as far as they go, are in themselves conclusive; but like all mere makers of experiments, he is not satisfied with those which are clear and decisive, but multiplies them most unnecessarily, without varying them to elucidate other and essential parts of the same subject. I think we may set it down as an axiom, that experiments should not be often repeated, which merely tend to establish a principle already known and admitted; but that the next step should be, the application of that principle to useful purposes. If Spallanzani had employed half his time in this way, and had considered digestion under all the various states of the body and stomach, with all the varieties of food, both natural and artificial, he had employed his time much better than in making experiments without end.

The food of most animals being composed either of vegetables, animals, or both, and a solvent admitted as an agent in digestion; it only remained to prove, that the effect of the process of digestion, was to produce from these various substances, an animal matter, similar in all animals who live on such substances. But the application of principles requires more than simply the knowledge of the principle itself; and therefore those who cannot reason from analogy, or draw general conclusions from a few convincing facts; and who require to have every relative conclusion or inference proved by an experiment, however unnecessary or fatiguing to the reader, must be pleased with Spallanzani; but he must
tire

tire even those whom he informed, and much more those who only read his works in expectation of something new. Reaumur, seemed indeed willing to give up the idea of trituration being the sole cause of digestion; but Spallanzani persists in proving that it is not performed by trituration.

To make comparative experiments upon the digestive power of different animals, they should be under the same circumstances relative to digestion: they should be equal in age; for the growing eat more than the full-grown, and of course digest faster; and this point therefore can be best ascertained in each class of animals, by selecting those which have attained their full-growth. They should be equal in fatness, for this makes a very material difference in the powers of digestion in the same animal; and they should be equal in health; which last circumstance, of all others, probably makes the greatest difference in the powers of the stomach. In comparing animals of the same class, the atmosphere should likewise be of the same temperature; for the different classes of animals are variously affected by the same degree of heat. Experiments made upon snakes and lizards in the winter, will differ greatly from those made in the summer, while similar experiments made on dogs will have nearly the same result in both seasons. Nor will the powers of the stomach be found equal in the same class; for sleeping animals, of the quadruped kind, as hedge-hogs, do not digest in the winter, but in the summer only; therefore the conclusions to be drawn from experiments made respecting the digestive powers in one, are not at all applicable to those made in the other season.

Spallanzani observed that the snake digested food faster in June, when the heat was at 82° and 83° , than in April, when it was only 60° ; from whence he concludes, that heat assists digestion; but this heat is not the immediate, but the remote cause of the increased power: heat having produced in the animal greater necessity for nourishment; and of course greater powers; gastric juice was therefore secreted faster and in greater quantity.

As a proof that heat does not act as an immediate, but only as a remote cause in assisting digestion, I shall mention the effect it produced upon

upon a hedge-hog, the subject of Mr. Jenner's third experiment on the heat of that animal, related in the former part of this volume*.

"The hedge-hog, while the heat of the stomach was at 30° , had neither desire for food, nor power of digesting it; but when increased by inflammation in the abdomen to 93° , the animal seized a toad which happened to be in the room; and upon being offered some bread and milk, it immediately eat it. The heat roused up the actions of the animal economy; and the parts being unable to carry on these actions without being supplied with nourishment, the stomach was stimulated to digest, to afford them that supply."

Spallanzani also mentions the slow digestion in serpents, and quotes Bomare; who gives an account of a serpent at Martinico, which after having retained a chicken in its stomach for three months, it was not completely digested, the feathers still adhering to the skin^b. The truth of this fact I should very much doubt, especially in so warm a climate as that of Martinico; where I must suppose the digestive powers to be constantly wanted; unless in Martinico, as in colder climates, there is a torpid season, in which the act of digestion is not necessary: but in that case the serpent would not have swallowed the chicken. When at Bellisle, in the beginning of the winter 1761-2, I conveyed worms, and pieces of meat, down the throats of lizards when they were going into winter quarters, keeping them afterwards in a cool place. On opening them at different periods, I always found the substances which I had introduced, entire, and without any alteration: sometimes they were in the stomach; at other times they had passed into the intestine; and some of the lizards that were allowed to live, voided them towards the spring, with but very little alteration in their structure. So that digestion is regulated by the other actions of the body. Warmth requiring action suitable to that warmth; the body requiring nourishment suitable to that action; and the stomach being called upon, obeys.

Spallanzani has made several attempts to prove what few will subscribe to; that stones in the gizzards of birds are of no use towards the break-

* Vide page 100.

^b Bomare Dict. d'Histoire Nat.

ing or grinding down the grain ; and that they are picked up accidentally. These stones have long been supposed to answer the purposes of trituration : they have been considered as an assistance to the stomach, in the manner of teeth, and of course necessary for digestion. Spallanzani combats this opinion ; but as stones are universally found in gizzards, he found it necessary to account for the mode of their being conveyed there, and attributes it to chance. But we find that the gizzards which have most occasion for them, and are most able to use them, are likewise best supplied with them : to corroborate which facts, may be added what we observed before, that in the larger gizzards are to be found the largest pebbles. In a turkey, two hundred were found ; in a goose, a thousand ; which could not depend entirely upon chance. In trying whether the stones were of service, Spallanzani put tubes, needles, and lancets, in gizzards in which there were but very few stones, and found them broken ; but in this experiment they had been forty-eight hours in the gizzards ; whereas in the former experiments with the same kind of tubes, thirty-six hours was the longest time ; in another eighteen hours ; and in another the breaking of those substances was begun in less than two hours ; therefore the experiments were not perfectly fair, as the times were not equal. What he thinks the most conclusive, is where he had taken care there should be no stones, yet the hard indigestible substances were acted upon much in the same way as when there were stones ; but in this experiment he does not give the time, which is very accurately stated in most of the others.

He found that the inner surface of the stomach was not hurt by such substances. Indeed it is scarcely possible for the inner coat of the stomach of a fowl to be pierced by sharp pointed substances ; its quantity of motion being so inconsiderable, as hardly to make a body pass through its inner coat. But the principal reason is, that this motion being lateral, it does not press perpendicularly to its axis, but is one surface sliding in a contrary direction to another ; and this not in a straight, but in a circular direction, as will be explained hereafter.

In considering the strength of the gizzard, and its probable effects when compared with the human stomach, it must appear that the gizzard is in itself very fit for trituration ; we are not however to conclude
that

that stones are entirely useless; for if we compare the strength of the muscles of the jaws of animals who masticate their food, with those of birds who do not, we shall say that the parts are well calculated for the purpose of mastication, yet we are not from thence to infer that the teeth in such jaws are useless, even although we have proof that the gums do the business when the teeth are gone. If stones are of use, which we may reasonably conclude they are, birds have an advantage over animals having teeth, so far as stones are always to be found, while the teeth are not renewed: he concludes, "That we have at length a decision of the famous question concerning the use of these pebbles, so long agitated by authors; it appearing that they are not at all necessary for the trituration of the firmest food, &c." but says, "He will, however, not deny that when put in motion by the gastric muscles, they are capable of producing some effects on the contents of the stomach." Now if we constantly find in an organ substances which can only be subservient to the functions of that organ, should we deny them that use, although the part can do its office without them?

To account for pebbles being found in the gizzards of birds, he supposes them picked up by chance, or by their not distinguishing between food and stones. It appears singular, that only those which have gizzards should be so stupid: he owns, that Redi and himself found that birds died of hunger, without having picked up more stones than usual, which we might suppose would not have been the case if they had no choice; nor can stones be confounded with the grain on which these birds feed.

The stones assist in grinding down the grain, and by separating its parts allow the gastric juice to come more readily in contact with it; they also rub off the digested surface, by which means the remainder is sooner brought into contact with the gastric juice.

It has been mentioned, that the motion of the gizzard is hardly observable, and cannot be felt by the hand; but for the purpose of trituration that is not necessary; for its cavity is very small, and adapted to its contents, which it must always be, or it cannot possibly grind; and therefore they require but little motion to affect them. A swelling and collapsing, like the motion of the heart, would have no effect. The ex-

tent of motion in grind-stones need not be the tenth of an inch, if their motion is alternate and in contrary directions. But although the motion of the gizzard is hardly visible, yet we may be made very sensible of its action by putting the ear to the sides of a fowl while it is grinding its food, when we can hear the stones moving upon one another.

It may be remarked, that the motion of the whole intestinal canal, from the fauces to the anus, is naturally so slow, as not to be excited into quick motion. The food passes slowly along the œsophagus; and even in that of a man, fluids which might be expected to act by their own gravity, descend but slowly. I imagine, however, we may be certain that the œsophagus has always a regular contraction; and that the lower parts must relax in progression, as it contracts above; so that no position of the body makes any difference in this action.

Upon exposing the stomach in living animals, we do not find it much agitated or affected; not even by handling or being irritated. The same thing may be observed in the whole tract of intestines; and we find that when the fæces are expelled by the action of the gut alone, that this expulsion is slow; the stomach and rectum, however, can be emptied at once; but this is done by the abdominal and other muscles. We know that the action of vomiting is performed entirely by the diaphragm and abdominal muscles; and we know by the same action the contents of the rectum can be expelled.

We need not seek for another power to empty the stomach in vomiting, these muscles being often capable of forcing the bowels themselves out of the abdomen, producing a rupture. It is not necessary the stomach itself should act violently to produce an evacuation of its contents; nor is it even necessary it should act at all. Since the lungs do not act in the least of themselves, to throw up any extraneous matter; and a cough to the lungs is similar to a vomit to the stomach. The muscles of respiration are the active parts in emptying the lungs, and act both naturally and preternaturally. The muscles of the thorax and abdomen do not act naturally on the contents of the abdomen, but often act preternaturally, producing an evacuation from its viscera.

There

There is reason to believe that the natural motion in all stomachs is regular. What makes me of this opinion, is that appearance which takes place in the stomach of animals who are covered with hair, and who lick their own bodies; and of such as feed on whole animals, who are likewise covered with hair. In the calf, for instance, who licks his skin with his tongue, and swallows whatever is attached to the rough surface of that organ, balls of hair are often found in the cavity of the stomach; on examining their surface, the hairs in each hemisphere seem to arise from a centre, and to have the same direction, which is circular, and corresponding to what would appear to be the axis of this motion, resembling what we see in different parts of the skin of animals whose hair take different turns. This regularity in the direction of the hair, in such balls, could not be produced if there was not a regular motion in the stomach. This motion is also proved in the dog; for I have seen a ball of this kind, that had been thrown up from a dog's stomach, where the same regularity in the turns of the hair was very evident and complete. The same motion seems also to take place in the bird kind: in the cuckoo, for instance, which in certain seasons lives on caterpillars, some of whom have hairs of a considerable length on their bodies, the ends of these are found sticking in the inner horny coat of the stomach or gizzard, while the hairs themselves are laid flat on its surface; not in every direction, which would be the case if there was no regular motion, but all one way, arising from a central point placed in the middle of the horny part; and this appearance on the surface of both sides of the gizzard corresponding. These two facts prove, in my opinion, a regular and circular motion taking place in the gizzard and membranous stomach; and therefore, most probably, something similar is carried on in all the various kinds of stomachs. Indeed this motion in the stomach is so considerable, than when there is no horny defence, we find the coats of the stomach sometimes pierced by hard pointed bodies. Thus the cows who feed on the grass of bleaching grounds have their stomachs, especially the second, stuck full of pins; and fish who prey upon, and swallow other fish entire, often have their stomachs pierced by the bones.

Spallanzani

Spallanzani calls the inner coat, cartilaginous; whereas, in fact, it is a horny substance, forming an inner cuticle, but differing in some respects from the common cuticle. This horny substance not only differs in structure from the common cuticle, but in its attachment, from both cuticle, nails, and hoofs. The cutis, where it is covered by such substances, has a vast number of villi on its surface, which pass into corresponding perforations in the cuticle, by which structure of parts, when the cuticle, nails, or hoofs are separated, their inner surface appears to be full of small perforations; and the cutis from which they have been removed is villous; and these villi are more numerous in some parts than in others, where the sense of touch is required to be delicate or acute. But the inner lining of the gizzard is just the reverse; that surface of the horny substance which is in contact with the gizzard being villous; and when separated, the inner surface of the gizzard appears perforated. These villi are the last formed parts of this horny substance, or are the fibres of which the horny coat is composed. It is probable, that this horny substance takes the form of villi that it may be more firmly connected with the inner surface of the stomach; there being no occasion for acute sensation in the stomach.

We may remark here, that the experiments made on the digestion of ruminating animals have been deficient, which arises from this process in them being more complicated than in the stomachs of other animals; requiring attention to be paid to certain circumstances, which cannot take place in stomachs of only one cavity.

The circumstance mentioned by Spallanzani, of the ruminating animals voiding the tubes, shows that they are not careful the whole food should be returned into the mouth to be chewed a second time; for if they were, the tubes would certainly come up likewise, and would as certainly be thrown out of their mouths as improper to be chewed, which very often happened. But it was hardly necessary to make experiments to ascertain whether ruminating animals digested meat, when we know that in some cold countries, the cattle are fed on dried fish; and most animals eat their own secondines: indeed the circumstance of animals living upon both animal and vegetable food might have taught us, that the mode of digesting both (whatever it is) was the same; therefore

therefore it could only be necessary to discover that mode; except we absurdly conceive, that two different modes might take place in the same stomach at the same time.

Spallanzani gives the opinion of authors respecting digestion; and so anxious is he to combat the idea of its being fermentation, that he will hardly allow that fermentation ever takes place in the stomach. That fermentation can go on in the stomach, there is no doubt; but when this happens it arises from the powers of digestion being defective. It is often found that milk, vegetables of all kinds, wine, and whatever has sugar in its composition, become much sooner sour in some stomachs, than they would, if left to undergo a spontaneous change out of the body: and even spirits, in certain stomachs, almost immediately degenerate into a very strong acid. I am inclined to suppose, that it is the sugar which is converted into spirit, and the spirit into acid; consequently a glass of brandy, from being much stronger, because less diluted, most probably contains as much matter, likely to become acid, as half a pint of wine. In other substances, besides those mentioned above, the fermentative process (unless prevented by that of digestion) appears to begin sooner in the stomach, than out of the body. All oily substances, particularly butter, very soon become rancid after being taken into the stomach; and this rancidity is the effect of the first process of the fermentation of oil. Mr. Sieffert has been able to restore rancid oils to their original sweetness, by adding to them their due quantity of fixed air*; the loss of which I consider as the first process in this fermentation, similar to what happens in the fermentation of animal and vegetable substances.

Animal food does not so readily ferment in the stomach, when combined with vegetables, as when it is not; for the vegetables running more quickly into fermentation, preserve the meat from putrefaction. Put a piece of meat and some sugar, or bread, into water, and let them stand in a warm place, the bread and sugar will begin to ferment, the water will become sour, and the meat be preserved: but the acid becoming weaker,

* Physical and chymical Essays by Sir Tobern Bergman.

as the fermentation advances towards the putrefactive, the meat at last begins to acquire the same putrid disposition. Of this Sir John Pringle was not aware in making his experiments on this subject. Yet this last part of the process cannot, I think, take place in the stomach; for a succession of acids will be formed, by which the meat will be preserved sweet till it is digested: the formation of this acid in the stomach, most probably, not preventing the digestion of those substances which are incapable of being rendered acid.

Bread allowed to remain in the stomach of a dog for eight hours, is so much changed, that it will not run into the vinous fermentation; but when taken out and kept in a warm place, becomes putrid: its putrefaction, however, is not so quick as a solution of meat that has been in the stomach for the same length of time. Similar effects are produced when milk and bread are the food administered; and probably the gastric juice, when in sufficient quantity, will always prevent the vinous fermentation.

Spallanzani's next trials were to determine, whether the gastric juice had the power of recovering meat already putrid; a fact which might have been proved by one experiment. For if very putrid meat is given to a dog, and the dog killed after some time, the meat will be found sweet, and all putrefaction at an end. Therefore his allowing fresh meat to continue a longer or shorter time in the stomach was immaterial, as it could not become putrid.

It appears from the above facts, that the stomach has not so much power in preventing the acetous fermentation in vegetables, as in correcting the putrefactive disposition in animal substances. For although this cannot be certainly known in those who eat both animal and vegetable food, yet it does not appear that the putrefaction of animal substances (where nothing else is eaten) takes place so quickly in the stomach, as the change which is produced in vegetables; the acetous disposition is therefore either stronger than the putrefactive, or it more readily takes place.

It may be admitted as an axiom, that two processes cannot go on at the same time, in the same part, of any substance; therefore, neither vegetable

getable nor animal substances can undergo their spontaneous changes, while digestion is going on in them; a process superior in power to that of fermentation. But if the digestive power is not perfect, then the vinous and acetous fermentation will take place in the vegetable, and the putrefactive in the food of those animals which live wholly on flesh. The gastric juice therefore preserves vegetables from running into fermentation, and animal substances from putrefaction; not from any antiseptic quality in the juice, but, by making them go through another process, prevents the spontaneous change from taking place. In most stomachs there is an acid, even although the animal has lived upon meat for many weeks; this, however, is not always the case, therefore we must suppose it is only formed occasionally. Whether the stomach has a power of immediately secreting this acid, or first secretes a sugar which afterwards becomes acid, is not easily ascertained: but I should be inclined to suppose, from analogy, the last to be the case; for animals in health seem to have the power of secreting sugar, as we find in the milk, and sometimes in the urine, from disease. The acid prevails sometimes to so great a degree, as to become a disease, attended with very disagreeable symptoms, the stomach converting all substances which have a tendency to become acid, into that form: the sugar of vegetables, and in some stomachs even vinous spirits, turning directly into acid. To ascertain whether there is an acid naturally in the stomach, it will be proper to examine the contents before the birth, when the digestive organs are perfect, and when no acid can have been produced by disease, or any thing that has been swallowed. In the flink calf, near the full time, there is no acid found in the stomach; although the contents have the same coagulating powers with those of animals who have suckled.

As we find stomachs possessed of a power of dissolving the whole substance of a bone, it is reasonable to suppose that its earth is destroyed by the acid in the stomach.

The stomach appears not only to be capable of generating an acid, but also to have the power of producing air; but the last effect, I believe, arises from disease in that viscus. It may be difficult to account for the formation of this air; and as the stomach is a reservoir for substances disposed to

Y

ferment

ferment, it might be supposed to arise from the food going into that process: but this, in my opinion, will not account for the vast quantity of air frequently thrown up from some stomachs, even where food has not been swallowed for a considerable time, and where digestion appeared to have been completed; which we must conclude to have been the case, from the food not having disagreed with either stomach or bowels, and from the stools being good. When the gout falls on the stomach, the quantity of air thrown up is often immense. The same thing may be observed in some cases which are commonly called nervous; yet the process of digestion will not account for this formation of air, as no air is to be found* in healthy stomachs; neither is it to be accounted for from a defect in digestion, as that would probably be productive of worse consequences.

I am inclined to believe that the stomach has a power of forming air or letting it loose from the blood, as a kind of secretion: we can give no absolute proof of this taking place in the stomach, as it may in all cases be referred to a defect in digestion: but we have instances of air being found in other cavities, where no secondary cause can be assigned. I have been informed of air being detected in the uterus or vagina, without the persons themselves knowing any thing of it, except by not having at the time of its passing the same power to prevent its escape, as when it is in the rectum; from which circumstance they were always alarmed lest it might make a noise in its passage. This fact being so extraordinary, rendered me somewhat incredulous; but made me more inquisitive, with the hope of being enabled to ascertain and account for it; and those of whom I have been led to inquire, have always made the natural distinction, between air passing from the vagina, and by the anus; that from the anus they feel and can retain; but that in the vagina they cannot; nor are they sensible of it till it passes. A woman, whom I attended with the late Sir John Pringle, informed us of this fact; but mentioned it only as a disagreeable thing. I was anxious to determine, if there were any communication

* In all my experiments on digestion, in dogs, I have never been able to detect any air in the cavity of the stomach.

between

between the vagina and rectum, and was allowed to examine, but discovered nothing uncommon in the structure of these parts. She died some time after; and being permitted to open the body, I found no disease either in the vagina or uterus. Since that time I have taken opportunities of inquiring of a number of women, concerning this circumstance, and by three or four have been informed exactly of the same fact, with all the circumstances abovementioned: how far they are to be relied upon I will not pretend to determine. I have likewise found air in the cellular membrane, in some gun-shot wounds that had passed some way under the skin, without being able to account for its being there by any mechanical effect of the ball.

That air, is either formed from the blood, or let loose by some action of the vessels both naturally and from disease, is an undeniable fact. We find air formed in some fishes to answer natural purposes; for in those fishes whose air-bladders do not communicate externally (many of which there are) we must suppose it to have been formed there. We also find it in animals after death; and I have a piece of intestine of a hog which has a number of air-bladders upon it*. I have often seen such vesicles on the edges of the lungs; but these may be supposed to have been kind of aneurismal air-cells filled from the trachea, which may possibly be the case; but they are circumscribed and impervious, so that in the state we find them, they have no communication with the external air. In one instance I have discovered air in an abscess, which could not have been received from the external air; nor could it have arisen from putrefaction; the case is as follow:

A lady, about forty years of age, had been afflicted with complaints in the bladder and parts connected with it. From the symptoms, her disease was supposed by some to be the stone; but upon examination no stone was found. She had also an umbilical hernia, for which I had been consulted. She grew gradually worse; and from being a lusty became a thin woman. A small tumor appeared in the groin, and the skin over it became red, similar to an abscess when the matter is beginning to point

* Vide Plate.

externally; but before her death this subsided. A few days before she died, I was desired to examine a swelling on the lower and right-side of the belly, extending nearly from the navel to the spine of the ilium on the right-side, and almost of the same width. It was a tense swelling, but evidently contained air, and could be made to sound almost like a drum. It had come on within a very few weeks, and I felt myself puzzled to account for it, there being clearly no connection between that tumor and the umbilical hernia. I was inclined to suppose it to be a ventral hernia, containing the cæcum and part of the colon, filled with air. But as she had stools; as there were no symptoms of a strangulated gut, nor any uneasiness in the bowels, as I could not make the air recede, but felt it as if confined to that part, I own I could not conjecture what the case really was. The woman dying in a few days, I was permitted to examine the body. That I might not interfere with the tumor, or umbilical hernia, I made an opening into the abdomen on the right-side of the linea alba; and on examining the cavity of the abdomen, found every thing natural, except a small portion of the epiploon adhering to the inside of the navel; but opposite to the tumor, the parietes of the abdomen were in a natural state. On pressing the tumor by the hand, air was heard to make its escape; but whether by the vagina or anus was at first doubtful. On examining with more attention, it was discovered to come from between the two labia. I now opened the tumor externally, and let out the air, which was not in the least putrid, and was contained in a sac tolerably smooth on its inside, made up of compressed cellular membrane, the abdominal muscles and tendons forming the posterior surface, which extended as low as the inferior edge of Poupart's ligament. The contents of the abdomen were tolerably found; but when I inspected the viscera contained in the pelvis, they were found adhering to each other; the bladder to the body of the uterus; the broad ligaments and ovaria, to the uterus; and on examining these adhesions, I got into a cavity between the bladder, uterus, and vagina, on the right-side something like an abscess. From the right-side of this cavity there was a canal ascending to the brim of the pelvis, in the course of the round ligament, as far as to the going out of the iliac vessels,

vessels, which it seemed to accompany, and when it passed from behind Poupart's ligament, communicated with the tumor abovementioned. I next endeavoured to discover if there were any communication between the rectum and the abscess, but could find none, the gut appearing to be quite sound. Having removed the whole contents of the pelvis, with the canal leading to Poupart's ligament, and the ligament itself, with such of the abdominal muscles as composed part of the sac, I found both the rectum and vagina perfectly sound. The uterus had a polypus forming on its inside; neither the rectum nor uterus had any connection with the abscess; but there was a small communication between the abscess and the bladder; that portion of the bladder which made part of the abscess being very much diseased.

From this history of the appearances of the tumor before death, and the particular account I have given of the dissection, the reader may be able to make his own observations, and draw his own conclusions relative to the origin of the air. It certainly appeared to have been formed in this bag; and it was only towards the latter end of her life that it could have made its escape into the cavity of the bladder; for it was not possible to squeeze the air out of the tumor, when I first saw her; but just before death it became more flaccid. It could not be formed or let loose in consequence of putrefaction, for the air itself was free from any smell; and although the cavity between the vagina and bladder had on its internal surface the irregular ulcerated appearance of an abscess, yet that on the abdomen had not, was tolerably smooth, and had rather the appearance of having been formed in consequence of some foreign matter accumulating there.

This circumstance, of an animal having the power of forming air, or separating it from the juices by a kind of secretion, appears at first view to be supported by the experiments of Dr. Ingen-houfz*.

The Dr. observed that, when we immerse our bodies "in a cold or warm bath;" or, "By plunging the hand and arm even in cold water," that globules of air soon appear upon the skin: and to be certain of the

* Expⁿ upon Vegetables; proving their great Power of purifying the common Air, &c.

air coming from the body, he took all the necessary precautions to prevent the external air being carried into the water along with the body, which would certainly be a consequence, if the body or part were immersed quickly, or when dried. But although his experiments seem to prove this opinion, yet I imagine there is a circumstance the Dr. did not attend to at the time, which renders them very fallacious; for he did not consider that water, commonly, contains a great deal of air; therefore the globules of air might as readily come from the water as from the body; this circumstance makes it necessary to ascertain, by experiment, from whence the air comes which is attached to the body when immersed in water.

Water takes up air in proportion to its coldness, until it loses the property of water and becomes solid: upon this principle we may account for globules of air being found attached to the skin when a part of the body is immersed in water colder than itself; for when we immerse the whole body we increase the heat of the water, especially that next to the skin; and if we immerse only a part, as an arm, it being commonly in a smaller quantity of water, the water immediately surrounding it is also warmed. As a proof that, it is the air from the water, and not from the surface of the body*, it matters not what the substance is that is immersed, if it is but warmer than the water; for a piece of iron heated to about 150° , immersed in water about 70° , will warm the water in contact with it so as to make it part with its air. This effect of heat is

* "Count de Milly, in the Berlin Transactions for the year 1777, published experiments to show that there is an excretion of air, or, as it is termed, 'an aerial transpiration,' from the whole surface of the human body during bathing in warm water: but Dr. Pearson found, on repeating these experiments, that there was no appearance of aerial bubbles on the surface of the cuticle during bathing in warm water that had been previously boiled, so as to expel the air usually mixed and united to river, and spring-water. During bathing in the bath of Buxton, the human body, after being immersed, and kept at rest in it for some time, is covered with air-like bubbles; but these bubbles appear, in the same manner, on any solid body whatever that may be placed in it. It is therefore supposed that the attraction to the human body of the air, commonly suspended in water, especially when heated to the temperature of a warm-water bath, has been mistaken for an excretion of air from the cuticle."

further

further proved, by making an experiment, with only this difference, that the iron is to be ten degrees colder than the water; in this case little or no air will be separated, and of course no bubbles be observed. The bubbles of air do not appear to arise entirely from the degree of warmth of the water, but also in some measure from a solid body being immersed in it, which appears to have a power of attracting the air, whose affinity to the water is now weakened by heat; for simply heating the water to the same degree will not separate the air, as we find, by experiment, that no bubbles are produced: and this power of attracting the air appears, in some measure, to depend upon the solidity of the body immersed; at least, bodies have a greater number of bubbles in proportion to their solidity: for upon making comparative experiments between iron, stone, wood, and cork, the air separated from the water upon the surface of the iron and stone is in considerable quantity; that upon the wood very small, and scarcely any at all upon the cork.

It is perhaps impossible to determine, with absolute certainty, the seat of digestion; but it is more than probable it is principally in the stomach: this, however, will not be equally the case in all animals. We may venture to affirm that, in the long contracted œsophagus of the quadruped, digestion does not take place; and that the secretion of this part is a slimy mucus, possessed of no power similar to that of the gastric juice, being only intended to promote the easy passage of the food; while the lower end of the œsophagus in birds is exceedingly glandular, secretes the principal part of the gastric juice, and is a substitute for the deficiency of the secretion in the stomach of this class of animals, which in some is lined with a horny substance, and in others with a cuticle. But even in birds, the seat of digestion is chiefly in the stomach; the juice secreted in the lower part of the œsophagus being conveyed into that cavity. The mucus secreted by the other parts of the œsophagus, such as the crop in those who have one, has no such power. It is possible, however, that digestion may go on in the lower part of the œsophagus; for if any digestible substance should be retained in it, as may happen in many of those who receive whole animals into the stomach, as the gull and heron, who swallow snakes and fish entire, the

the tails of which may remain in the œsophagus till the head is digested; in such a case the tail itself may likewise be acted upon. As a further proof that digestion is carried on principally in the stomach, let us observe what happens to the yolk of an egg in the bird newly hatched. The yolk is not in the least consumed in the time of incubation; it appears to be reserved for the nourishment of the chick, between the time of hatching, and its either being supplied with food by its parents, or being able to procure it for itself; for we find, that although the yolk passes into the gut at some distance from the stomach, yet it is carried up to the stomach to be digested; and I have even seen it in the crop, being retained there till wanted.

In those animals whose stomach consists of several cavities, the precise place where digestion is carried on, has not been ascertained. I think, however, it may be set down as a fact, that digestion goes on in the fourth cavity. This is best proved by feeding the animal with a substance that does not require any kind of preparation for digestion, such as milk. Let a calf be killed about half an hour after it has sucked its mother, we shall find the whole milk, in the fourth cavity, firmly coagulated, and formed into a ball; while the first, second, and third cavities, contain only such food as requires mastication, and what other preparation is necessary to fit it for digestion; such animals have the power of conveying the food from the œsophagus, either to the first or fourth cavity, according to the nature of the food; and for this purpose there is a groove leading directly from the œsophagus to the fourth stomach, which I suppose can be converted into a canal when wanted.

It is probable that digestion is likewise carried on in the duodenum, especially in its upper part; which may arise from two causes; one, the intestine most probably secreting the same juice with the stomach; the other, some of the gastric juice, and also part of the food, having passed into the intestine before it had been converted into chyle.

Although the stomach is the seat of digestion, it is not solely appropriated to that purpose: in many animals it is not to be considered as only a digesting bag or bags, but in part as a reservoir for food. This is most remarkable in the ruminating animals, where the first stomach or bag is merely

merely a reservoir, and in this respect is analogous to a crop. It is the same in the porpus, and, I believe, in most animals of this class: although it cannot be supposed that they return the food, as they have not the power to masticate. In some animals, who do not ruminate, there is not the same necessity for distinct pouches; the stomach therefore consists either of one bag, singly; or with appendages, as in the pecari. But the whole of this bag is not endowed with the property of secreting the gastric juice, there being a part whose structure is very different from that appropriated to digestion, which is covered by a cuticle, as in the first, second, and third stomach of the ruminating animals, and in the first stomach of the porpus. The pecari, the common hog, and the rat, are instances of this. This circumstance takes place, in a smaller degree, in the horse. This increase of the cavity of the stomach, and its having appendages, beyond what is necessary for digestion alone, is peculiar to those animals who take in more food than what is immediately wanted, or which requires a certain degree of preparation prior to digestion. The crop in the eagle is of the first kind; and the crop in the gallinaceous fowls, and the first stomach in the ruminating animals and porpus, is of the second. It is the disposition of such animals to fill these cavities, and the quantity they contain, makes them seldom require being filled; it is probably the sensation produced from this fulness which gives satisfaction to the animal, and takes off the further desire for food, similar to what happens from filling the stomach itself of other animals, who having no such provision, are longer and oftener employed in pursuit of food.

I should be apt to suppose the power of the gastric juice to coagulate milk and some other animal mucilages*, is a test of the stomach being the seat of digestion; for although milk may be coagulated by other substances, yet when found in that state in the stomach, it is probably for the purpose of digestion; as milk, and many other natural substances, require being co-

* Milk is the substance commonly known to be coagulated by the gastric juice: but I find that it has also the same power over the white of an egg. Give to a dog some raw egg, and kill him half an hour after he has swallowed it, the egg will be found coagulated in his stomach, the same as if boiled; the crystalline humour, in the stomachs of fishes, is likewise found coagulated as if boiled.

agulated before they can be digested. I have found this coagulating power in the stomach of every animal which I have examined for that purpose, from the most perfect down to reptiles; and these appendages which I have considered only as reservoirs preparatory to digestion, as the first stomach in the ruminating animal, and the crop in birds, have no such power.

The gastric juice is a fluid somewhat transparent, and a little saltish or brackish to the taste. Whether this saltiness is essential, or only accidental, is not easily determined. Indeed, there are very few of our secretions which have not some salt in them; for it is found in the tears, the saliva, the secretion of the glans penis, of the glands of the urethra, and in the first and the last milk secreted in the udders of animals.

I should not be inclined to suppose that there is any acid in the gastric juice as a component or essential part of it, although an acid is very commonly found, even when no vegetable matter has been introduced into the stomach*. The acid is increased in some diseases, and in others the disposition to form it may be destroyed; which may be the reason why, by a kind of instinctive principle, many girls are fond of eating sour fruit, and of drinking vinegar; while others, on the contrary, from a different cause, often eat chalk, lime, and other substances of that kind: but the acid not being always found, it is not yet determined on what occasions it is formed, or in what manner it is destroyed.

* The only trial to which I ever put the gastric juice, (to ascertain if it was acid) was with the syrup of violets; and in many of the trials the colour of the mixture was changed to red: but it is necessary for the accuracy of the experiment, which is to determine this fact, that the animal should not be fed upon vegetables for some time before the trial is made, they being liable to become in some degree sour; therefore it is hardly fair to make the experiment on the contents of the stomach of animals who live upon vegetables. In many trials of this kind, we may be deceived, and led to suppose an alkali. For certain animal secretions being of a yellow cast, when such are mixed with the syrup of violets, the mixture is changed to a green. The truth of the experiment may, however, be known by adding a little acid; for if the green has been produced merely by a mechanical mixture, it will become immediately a scarlet, by being then a mixture of red and yellow; but if the secretion is not only of a yellow colour, but of an alkaline nature, it will also continue green; and by adding a little more acid than what saturates the alkali, the colour will then become that of orange.

The

The process of digestion differs from every other natural operation in the change of bodies. It is by no means fermentation, though it may somewhat resemble it. For fermentation is a spontaneous process, and is that natural succession of changes by which vegetable and animal matter is reduced to earth; therefore must be widely different from digestion, which converts both animal and vegetable substances into chyle; in the formation of which there cannot be a decomposition, similar to fermentation.

Digestion is very different from chymical solution, which is only an union of bodies by elective attraction, not a real change of the substances themselves, but of their properties. But digestion is an assimilating process, and in this respect is somewhat similar in its action to morbid poisons. It is a species of generation, two substances making a third; but the curious circumstance is its converting both vegetable and animal matter into the same kind of substance or compound, which no chymical process can effect. The chyle is compounded of the gastric juice, and digestible substances when perfectly converted; and it is probable that the quantity of gastric juice is nearly equal to that part of the food that is really converted into chyle; if so, it demonstrates the necessity of a very quick secretion, to supply a quantity so very considerable; but it is not lost to the constitution.

The progress of the conversion of food into chyle, is often well seen in the stomach of animals at different times after feeding, or even in the same meal. Fishes are good subjects on which to make observations for this purpose, as they swallow their food whole; that food is commonly fish, and often too large to be completely admitted into the stomach. As they do not masticate their food, it is not adapted to the cavity of the stomach; and we therefore often find part of it lying in the œsophagus, a circumstance from which the comparative progress of digestion becomes more obvious.

It may also be well observed in the stomach of a dog, in which the whole that it contains has been swallowed at the same time. In the great end the food will be but little altered; towards the middle, more; and towards the pylorus, will be similar to what is found in the duodenum.

From the structure of the stomach in ruminating animals, they are badly adapted to assist our inquiries on this subject; because whatever is swallowed in a hard solid form, and unfit for digestion, requiring to be ruminated, as metallic balls, will often be thrown out when returned into the mouth to be masticated; or it may lie a long time in the first stomach without being either thrown up or passed into the fourth, as I have frequently seen; therefore the chance of its getting into the fourth stomach in a proper time to fit it for the object of an experiment, being very uncertain, no great light can be derived from trials on animals of this class.

Live or fresh vegetables, when taken into the stomach, are first killed, by which a flabbiness in their texture is produced, as if boiled, and then they begin to be acted upon by the gastric juice.

Meat appears to undergo no change, as preparatory to digestion, but seems at once to submit to its union with the gastric juice: for after it has been acted upon, first, it appears to lose its texture; then becomes cineritious in colour; next gelatinous; and last, chyle. The first change made upon milk, and some other secretions, as the yolk and white of an egg, is coagulation; after which the gastric juice begins to acquire a power of union with them.

The first change which is produced on animal substances, out of the body, when either exposed to heat, or becoming putrid, is similar to the second of the three changes which takes place in digestion, and is only preparatory to the complete change, whether digestion or putrefaction.

It appears from many experiments, that the digested or animalized part, when carried into the intestine, is attracted by, or clings to its villous coat as if entangled among the villi; while the excrementitious part, such as bile, is found lying unconnected in the gut, as if separated from the other.

The food of most animals consists either of vegetable or animal substances; and vegetables seem intended to support one class, with a view to its being the food of another. Although there are classes of animals intended to subsist on each particular kind of food, yet they do not all invariably keep to the same kind in every stage of life; many being nourished

rished by animal food when young, that afterwards live on vegetables : which circumstance will be more fully discussed when treating of the first food of pigeons.

All stomachs do not equally digest the same substance, although it be their natural food. The caterpillar digests the expressed juice, but not the substance ; while other animals are capable of dissolving the whole. Some animals, as the common cattle, can feed on a variety of vegetables although they may have a preference ; but there are others that will hardly eat more than of one kind. This is the case with insects in general, and the silk-worm will scarcely touch any thing but mulberry-leaves. I believe those that live upon animal food are not so restricted in their choice.

It is probable that, all animal and vegetable substances are equally capable of being digested, if equally soft in their texture ; but some being much firmer in that respect, and others also united with indigestible matter, as the earth in bones, they more strongly resist the powers of the gastric juice, therefore mastication, and trituration, become necessary to bring them to a similar consistence. But substances may be rendered too soft ; for a fluid is difficult of digestion : we may observe that, nature has given us very few fluids as articles of food ; and to render those few fitter for the action of the digestive powers, a coagulating principle is provided to give them some degree of solidity*. It is not easy to assign a reason for a fluid state being unfavorable to digestion ; more particularly as it seems essential to fermentation and chymical solution. The necessary degree of solidity is, I should suppose, that of curd, or what is produced by the coagulation of animal mucilages, as of the white of an egg ; but this is only supposition, founded on the idea that nature's general principles are right, all the corresponding parts being adapted to one another, except when monstrous, either in form or action.

Mastication is the effect of a mechanical power, produced by parts particularly provided for that purpose, which are of various kinds, fitted for

* The circumstance of the crystalline humour, which is solid, being coagulated, prior to its being digested, renders it probable that all animal substances go through that process ; and that the loss of texture, which they undergo, arises from coagulation.

that

that sort of food the animal is by nature intended to live upon; and may be imitated with equal advantage by many other pieces of mechanism.

The masticating powers are of three kinds. The first is that which merely fits the substance for deglutition, as in the lion, and many other carnivorous animals; and in the ruminating tribe renders the food fit to be swallowed, to undergo that preparation in the first stomach which is necessary before it is further masticated for digestion. The second is, that which not only fits the food for deglutition, but exposes it to the action of the gastric juice, by breaking the shells or husks in which the nourishment is contained and defended from the powers of digestion. And the third is, that which bruises and divides the food by chewing, before it is received into the stomach, as happens to most vegetables; which mastication, although of considerable service, is not absolutely necessary. It however produces great saving in food.

The husk, of all the seeds of plants, although a vegetable substance, appears to be indigestible in a natural state; whether this arises from the nature of the husk itself, or from its compactness, I am not quite certain, but am inclined to suppose the last; as we find the cocoa, which is only a husk, is digestible when ground to a powder and well boiled. We know likewise, that cuticle, horn, hair, and feathers, although animal substances, are not affected, in the first instance, by the gastric juice; yet if reduced in Papin's digester to a jelly, that jelly can be acted upon in the stomach; we must therefore suppose that, a certain natural degree of solidity in animal and vegetable substances renders them indigestible. This compactness in the husk seems to be intended to preserve, while under ground, the farinaceous part of the seed, in which the living principle is placed, as the husk has probably no other power of resisting putrefaction but what arises from its texture. Whatever may be the use of the husk, it must be connected with the vegetative process of the plant. The same purpose of preservation is probably answered by the shells of all ova. Although husks are not capable of being dissolved in the gastric juice, yet they allow of transudation, and the seed is in some degree affected by it, which is known by its swelling in the stomach; yet it can only take up a certain proportion of it, but not sufficient to convert

vert it into chyle, the gastric juice having no power of action upon the husks themselves.

The essential oils of vegetables and animals are indigestible; but are soluble either in the gastric juice or chyle, by which means they become medicinal, from their stimulating powers. The essential oil of vegetables, but more particularly that of animals, would seem to pervade the very substance of those animals whose food contains much of this oil. Thus we find sea-birds, whose constant food is fish, taste very strongly of fish; and those who live on that kind of food, only during certain times of the year, as the wild duck, have that taste only at such seasons. This fact is so well known, that it was hardly necessary to put it to the test of an experiment; yet I took two ducks, and fed one with barley, the other with sprats, for about a month, and killed both at the same time; when they were dressed, the one fed wholly with sprats was hardly eatable, it tasted so strongly of fish.

Although bones are in part composed of animal substance, and so far digestible, yet they require stronger powers of digestion than common meat, from the animal substance being guarded by the earth. Thus the animal part of a bone is less readily soluble in an alkali than flesh, or even the animal part when deprived of its earth by an acid; nor will a bone submit to putrefaction so readily as meat, being guarded by the calcareous earth; therefore animals who live upon others, and swallow them whole, as the heron, more easily digest bone than those who are not accustomed to swallow bones, as the crow and magpye, who commonly only pick the flesh.

The degree of ease, or the contrary, with which substances are digested, will not only arise from a difference in solidity, but from a difference in the structure of the parts themselves. Brain, liver, muscle, and tendon, are digestible in the order here put down.

There is not only a difference in the degree of readiness with which the various kinds of natural food are digested; but these can also be made to undergo changes by art, that render them still more easy of digestion. For it appears that both boiled and roasted, and even putrid, meat is easier of digestion than raw; at least I have found it so in my experiments.

ments. This may be supposed to arise in the two first, from their juices being coagulated; but will not hold good with regard to the putrid. A raw egg is thought more easy of digestion than an egg hard boiled, although the raw one must be coagulated in the stomach before it can be digested. It may be observed, that what is easy of digestion in one stomach will not be so in another; in which last case the stomachs, I believe, are not healthy.

The whole of the food in many animals appears not to be digested, the substance in part being found in the fæces; for if a dog is fed with tallow, his excrements will consist of a somewhat firm unctuous substance; so that the oil is only digested in part. This circumstance of some part of the food, though digestible, not being acted upon by the gastric juice, may arise from two causes; first, many parts of vegetables being too firm in texture to be digested in the same time with the other food, are therefore carried along in a crude state, together with the chyle, into the duodenum; and secondly, from the stomach at the time being so much disordered as to digest imperfectly. We know that food may lie a considerable time in the stomach, when diseased, without being digested. Food has been retained in the stomach twenty-four hours, and thrown up without being in the least altered; the animal at the time not requiring nourishment, as is the case with those who go to rest in the winter.

The powers of digestion may, in some instances, be ascertained by the appearance of the excrement, in which if the food appear not to be much altered, we may conclude, that this power has had little or no influence on it. Thus the excrement of a flea, that has lived on blood, is nearly to appearance pure blood, not having even lost its colour.

Animals eat in proportion to the quantity of nourishment contained in the food, of which the stomach, from instinct, appears to be sensible; and also in proportion to the powers of converting what they eat into chyle. A caterpillar, perhaps, eats more in proportion to its size than any other animal that lives on the same kind of food; not having the power of dissolving the vegetable, only of extracting a juice or infusion from

from it; for the bit of leaf comes away entire, being coiled up and hardened; but by being put into water unfolds like tea.

There are few animals that do not eat animal food in some form or other; while there are many who do not eat vegetables at all; and therefore the difficulty to make the herbivorous eat meat, is not so great, as to make the carnivorous eat vegetables. Where there is an instinctive principle in an animal, directing it either to the one species of food or the other, the animal will certainly die, rather than break through that natural law, but may be made to violate every natural principle by artificial means. That the hawk tribe can be made to feed upon bread, I have known these thirty years; for to a tame kite I first gave fat, which it eat very readily; then tallow and butter; and afterwards small balls of bread rolled in fat or butter, and by decreasing the fat gradually, it at last eat bread alone, and seemed to thrive as well as when fed with meat. This, however, produced a difference in the consistence of the excrements; when it eat meat they were thin, and it had the power of throwing them to some distance; but when it eat bread, they became firmer in texture, and dropped like the excrement of a common fowl. Spallanzani attempted, in vain, to make an eagle eat bread by itself; but by enclosing the bread in meat, so as to deceive the eagle, the bread was swallowed, and digested in the stomach.

The excrements of animals we may suppose to be that part of the common food which is indigestible; and as food is either animal or vegetable, each of which is adapted to distinct classes of animals, it is natural to believe that the excrementitious part of each will be different; and where the animal feeds upon both, that the excrement will be of a mixed nature; although this appears probable, it is only true in some degree; for other circumstances must be attended to, as the mode of digestion, and whether the animal has a cæcum and colon, with their peculiar form, all which varieties have a connection with the changes the food undergoes. Vegetable food produces more excrement than animal, and this according to the kind or parts of vegetables. The woody parts and husks, which are indigestible, produce the most; the true farinaceous part the least; why there should be any at all from the farinaceous, and

A 2

animal

animal substance, except what had eluded the action of the digestive organs, is not easily accounted for.

All fæces have a tendency to putrefaction, but least in those animals who feed on vegetables. Indeed, the excrement from vegetable food alone, could hardly ever become putrid if it was not mixed with the mucus of the intestines; and would even then be kept sweet by the tendency which undigested vegetables have to take on the vinous and acetous fermentation. But the fæces of those which live entirely on animal food, in general very soon become putrid; and indeed often before they are voided: however, such animals have either no cæcum or colon; or if they have, it is very short, so that the excrement is not long retained, therefore has less time to become putrid. When the fæces stagnate so as to take on either the vinous or putrefactive fermentation, air is let loose, which will be according to the nature of the fermentation; most probably, from the vegetable it will be fixed, and from the animal, inflammable air.

The fæces of most animals are tinged by the bile, which in some gives them a yellowish green colour; in the bird they are generally green, but sometimes white, from being mixed with the urine. The fæces of the maggot appear to be loaded with bile; for besides being yellow, they are extremely bitter, which is known by eating the kernel of a nut that has a maggot in it. Some kinds of food, when not wholly digested, give a tinge to the fæces, as grass to the excrement of cows.

Those animals which feed upon vegetables alone, commonly have their fæces somewhat solid; but this will vary according to the state of the vegetable, whether green or dried; therefore the kind of fæces would seem to depend on the nature of the indigestible part of the food, and must vary according to the digestive powers in different animals: an animal that feeds upon grass, has the fæces much softer than the same animal when fed on the same kind of grass made into hay, the fæces of the herbivorous animals being softer in the summer than the winter: but green vegetable food does not produce soft fæces in all animals; for the caterpillar, which lives upon the leaves of vegetables, has its fæces almost dry; and we find in some ruminating animals, as sheep, that the difference in the fæces

feces, during summer and winter, is inconsiderable. Most quadrupeds, and birds, that live principally upon vegetables, have their cæca large, and the colon long, as many of the ruminating animals. Some have the colon both long and large, as the horse, and the rat tribe; which circumstance has considerable effects on the feces, allowing them to become dry: in a few of the ruminating animals, and of the rat kind, they are formed into small portions.

The feces of quadrupeds, that live upon animal food, are commonly soft, and in birds, are fluid; but in such as live on both animals and vegetables, they are in consistence of a mixt nature, and will be more or less soft, according to the food. If a dog is fed entirely on animal substance, its feces will be soft; if wholly on vegetable, as bread, they will become so hard as to be expelled with difficulty.

Spallanzani made some experiments, to prove that digestion is carried on after death; but they are not so conducted as to correspond with the appearances in the dead body. An experiment, although it may be very well and accurately made, so far as the experiment goes, if it does not preserve a close connection with the purpose for which it was made, the conclusions to be drawn from it cannot correspond with the intention. This is exactly the case with the experiments of Spallanzani, which although they prove that meat was digested in the stomach after the animal was killed, (which no one doubted) yet are not at all calculated to show that the stomach itself may be digested. In fact, the mode in which they were managed, rather tended to prevent that effect from taking place, the gastric juice having substances introduced on which it could act, was less likely to affect the coats of the stomach. That the digestion was not carried on merely by the gastric juice secreted before death, is evident from his own account, some of the food which had been introduced and digested, being found in the duodenum; a thing that could not have happened, if a cessation of the actions of life in the involuntary parts had taken place when visible life terminated. There had been an action, and most probably a secretion, in the stomach. The only experiment that can be made with any probability of a decided result is, to kill the animal while the stomach is empty, and observe what af-

A a 2

terwards

terwards takes place. There are very few stomachs that have not, when examined after death, some of the inner villous coat destroyed; which may have been done by the gastric juice in the ducts of the glands which secrete it.

Dr. Stevens, in an inaugural dissertation, published at Edinburgh 1777, gives a number of experiments on digestion, some of which are well devised, to ascertain the substances that are easiest of digestion, the thing in fact more wanted, than the cause of that process; but many of his experiments, more especially those on ruminating animals, are not made with sufficient accuracy. How the chopped hay and pot-herbs came to be so much changed in the first stomach of a ruminating animal I cannot conceive, as I have reason to believe it has not the least power of digesting; and should doubt very much that hay could have been wholly digested in any stomach. His experiment which was made on substances out of the body, proves that the gastric juice is not able in all cases to prevent the vinous and acetous fermentation in vegetables; which circumstance I believe often takes place in the living body, when the stomach is weak. He seems to be in some apprehension for the safety of the stomach itself, from the action of so powerful a solvent as the gastric juice: he is inclined, however, to suppose that the living powers of the animal may be a guard against such effects; but is still disposed to fear that, in all cases these may not be sufficient.

The living power, in the stomach, must be indeed very weak to allow of its being digested; and in that case I suspect the secretion of the gastric juice would be so defective, as to prevent such effects being produced.

Dr. Stevens gives two cases, with the dissection, to prove that the living stomach has not always the power to resist the action of the gastric juice: but he has not made it clear, that those very stomachs might not have been digested after death. The appearance of the edges of the hole should have been more particularly described; for if it took place before death, it is probable it was owing to ulceration, which I have sometimes seen. Men should be very accurate in ascertaining facts, before they advance them, especially when these are either to overturn a
received

received opinion, or to establish a new one. As to the fact, of living animals being swallowed and digested, no fresh proofs are necessary, as we are eating oysters every day ; but this does not prove that they are digested while alive. In his experiments made on ruminating animals, and the dog, as the vegetables were not so readily digested as the meat, he concludes, " It is possible every species of animal has its peculiar gastric liquor, capable of dissolving certain substances only"; which is certainly not true.

Mr. Senebier relates some experiments made by Mr. Gossé, upon himself, and which hardly contain any thing, except a curious conjecture of Mr. Senebier's, that distention of the stomach is the cause of the secretion of the gastric liquor. He mentions the substances, both animal and vegetable, which are not digestible ; then those difficult of digestion ; afterwards those easily digested ; also what substances facilitate digestion ; and what retard it ; but if we are to judge of these facts from the experiments he has made to ascertain them, I am inclined to believe they have not been made with sufficient accuracy to be depended upon.

ON THE DIGESTION OF THE STOMACH AFTER DEATH.

THE following account, of the Stomach being digested after Death, was drawn up at the desire of the late Sir John Pringle, when he was president of the Royal Society ; and the circumstance which led to this is as follow : I was opening, in his presence, the body of a patient of his own, where the stomach was in part dissolved, which appeared to him very unaccountable, as there had been no previous symptom that could have led him to suspect any disease in the stomach. I took that opportunity of giving him my ideas respecting it ; and told him that, I had long been making experiments on digestion, and considered this as one of the facts which proved a converting power in the gastric juice. I mentioned my intention of publishing the whole of my observations on this subject at some future period ; but he desired me to give this fact by itself, with my remarks, as it would prove that there is a solvent power in the stomach, and be of use in the examination of dead bodies.

An

An accurate knowledge of the appearances in animal bodies that die of a violent death, that is, in perfect health, or in a sound state, ought to be considered as a necessary foundation for judging of the state of the body in those that are diseased.

But as an animal body undergoes changes after death, or when dead, it has never been sufficiently considered what those changes are; and till this be done, it is impossible we should judge accurately of the appearances in dead bodies. The diseases which the living body undergoes (mortification excepted) are always connected with the living principle, and are not in the least similar to what may be called diseases or changes in the dead body: without this knowledge, our judgment of the appearances in dead bodies must often be very imperfect, or very erroneous; we may see appearances which are natural, and may suppose them to have arisen from disease; we may see diseased parts, and suppose them in a natural state; and we may suppose a circumstance to have existed before death, which was really a consequence of it; or we may imagine it to be a natural change after death, when it was truly a disease of the living body. It is easy to see therefore, how a man in this state of ignorance must blunder, when he comes to connect the appearances in a dead body with the symptoms that were observed in life; and indeed, all the usefulness of opening dead bodies depends upon the judgment and sagacity with which this sort of comparison is made.

There is a case of a mixed nature, which can neither be reckoned a process of the living body, nor of the dead; it participates of both, inasmuch as its cause arises from life, and the effect cannot take place till after death. To render this more intelligible, it will be necessary to give some general ideas concerning the cause and effects.

An animal substance, when joined with the living principle, cannot undergo any change in its properties but as an animal; this principle always acting and preserving the substance, possessed of it from dissolution, and from being changed according to the natural changes which other substances undergo.

There are a great many powers in nature, which the living principle does not enable the animal matter, with which it is combined, to resist,
viz.

viz. the mechanical and most of the strongest chymical solvents. It renders it however capable of resisting the powers of fermentation, digestion, and perhaps several others, which are well known to act on this same matter, when deprived of the living principle, and entirely to decompose it. The number of powers, which thus act differently on the living and dead animal substance, is not ascertained: we shall take notice of two, which can only affect this substance when deprived of the living principle; which are, putrefaction and digestion. Putrefaction is an effect which arises spontaneously; digestion is an effect of another principle acting upon it, and shall here be considered a little more particularly.

Animals, or parts of animals, possessed of the living principle, when taken into the stomach, are not in the least affected by the powers of that viscus, so long as the animal principle remains; hence it is that we find animals of various kinds living in the stomach, or even hatched and bred there: but the moment that any of those lose the living principle, they become subject to the digestive powers of the stomach. If it were possible for a man's hand, for example, to be introduced into the stomach of a living animal, and kept there for some considerable time, it would be found, that the dissolvent powers of the stomach could have no effect upon it; but if the same hand were separated from the body, and introduced into the same stomach, we should then find that the stomach would immediately act upon it.

Indeed, if this were not the case, we should find that the stomach itself ought to have been made of indigestible materials; for if the living principle was not capable of preserving animal substances from undergoing that process, the stomach itself would be digested.

But we find on the contrary, that the stomach, which at one instant, that is, while possessed of the living principle, was capable of resisting the digestive powers which it contained, the next moment, viz. when deprived of the living principle, is itself capable of being digested, either by the digestive powers of other stomachs, or by the remains of that power which it had of digesting other things.

From these observations we are led to account for an appearance which we often find in the stomachs of dead bodies; and at the same time they throw

throw a considerable light upon the nature of digestion. The appearance which has been hinted at, is a dissolution of the stomach at its greatest extremity; in consequence of which, there is frequently a considerable aperture made in that viscus. The edges of this opening appear to be half dissolved, very much like that kind of dissolution which fleshy parts undergo when half digested in a living stomach, or when dissolved by a caustic alkali, viz. pulpy, tender, and ragged.

In these cases, the contents of the stomach are generally found loose in the cavity of the abdomen, about the spleen and diaphragm. In many subjects this digestive power extends much further than through the stomach. I have often found, that after it had dissolved the stomach at the usual place, the contents of the stomach had come into contact with the spleen and diaphragm, had partly dissolved the adjacent side of the spleen, and had dissolved the diaphragm quite through; so that the contents of the stomach were found in the cavity of the thorax, and had even affected the lungs in a small degree.

There are very few dead bodies in which the stomach is not, at its great end, in some degree digested; and one who is acquainted with dissections, can easily trace the gradations from the smallest to the greatest.

To be sensible of this effect, nothing more is necessary than to compare the inner surface of the great end of the stomach with any other part of the inner surface; what is found will appear soft, spongy, and granulated, and without distinct blood-vessels, opaque and thick; while the other will appear smooth, thin, and more transparent; and the vessels will be seen ramifying in its substance, and upon squeezing the blood which they contain from the larger branches to the smaller, it will be found to pass out at the digested ends of the vessels, and appear like drops on the inner surface.

These appearances I had often seen, and I do suppose that they had been seen by others; but I was at a loss to account for them; at first, I supposed them to have been produced during life, and was therefore disposed to look upon them as the cause of death; but I never found that they had any connection with the symptoms: and I was still more at a loss to account for these appearances, when I found that they were most frequent

frequent in those who died of violent deaths, which made me suspect that the true cause was not even imagined*.

At this time I was employed in making many experiments upon digestion, in different animals, all of which were killed, at different times, after being fed with various kinds of food; some of them were not opened immediately after death, and in some of them I found the appearances abovedescribed in the stomach. For pursuing the inquiry about digestion, I procured the stomachs of a vast variety of fishes, which all die of violent deaths, and may be said to die in perfect health, with their stomachs commonly full. In them we see the progress of digestion most distinctly; for as they swallow their food whole, that is, without mastication, and swallow fish that are much larger than the digesting part of the stomach can contain, the shape of the fish which swallows being very favourable for this inquiry, we find in many instances the part swallowed, which is lodged in the digesting part of the stomach, is more or less dissolved, while that which remains in the œsophagus is perfectly sound: and in many of these I found, that the digesting part of the stomach was itself reduced to the same dissolved state as the digested part of the food.

Being employed upon this subject, and therefore enabled to account more readily for appearances which had any connection with it, and observing that the half-dissolved parts of the stomach, were similar to the

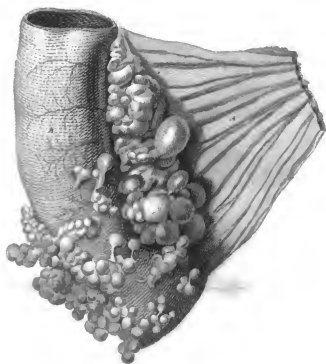
* The first time that I had occasion to observe this appearance, in such as died suddenly from violence in the living body, and in whom therefore I could not easily suppose it to be the effect of disease, was in a man who had his skull fractured, by one blow of a poker. Just before this accident, he had been in perfect health, and had taken a hearty supper of cold meat, cheese, bread, and ale. Upon opening the abdomen, I found that the stomach, though it still contained a good deal, was dissolved at its great end, and a considerable part of these its contents lay loose in the general cavity of the belly; a circumstance which puzzled me very much. The second instance was in a man who died at St. George's Hospital, a few hours after receiving a blow on his head, which fractured his skull. From these two cases, among various conjectures about so strange an appearance, I began to suspect it might be peculiar to cases of fractured skull; and therefore, whenever I had an opportunity, I examined the stomach of every person who died from that accident; but I found many of them which had not this appearance. I afterwards met with the same appearance in a man who had been hanged.

half-digested food; it immediately struck me, that it was the process of digestion going on after death; and that the stomach, being dead, was no longer capable of resisting the powers of that menstruum, which itself had formed for the digestion of food. With this idea, I set about making experiments to produce these appearances at pleasure, which would have taught us how long the animal ought to live after feeding, and how long it should remain after death before it is opened; and above all, to find out the method of producing the greatest digestive power in the living stomach.

These appearances throw considerable light on the principles of digestion, and show, that it is neither a mechanical power, nor contractions of the stomach, nor heat, but something secreted in the coats of the stomach, and thrown into its cavity, which there animalises the food, or assimilates it to the nature of the blood. The power of this juice is confined or limited to certain substances, especially of the vegetable and animal kingdoms; and although this menstruum is capable of acting independently of the stomach, yet it is indebted to that viscus for its continuance.

EXPLANATION

Plate



B. G. del.

H. W. sculp.

EXPLANATION OF THE PLATE.

A Portion of intestine of a hog, the peritoneal coat of which is covered in several places with small pellucid cysts, containing air.

It was sent to me by my friend Mr. Jenner, surgeon, at Berkley, who informed me, that this appearance is found very frequently upon the intestines of hogs that are killed in the summer months.

A The portion of the mesentery.

B The portion of intestine on which the air-cells are situated.

ON A SECRETION IN THE CROP OF BREEDING PIGEONS, FOR THE NOURISHMENT OF THEIR YOUNG.

THE nourishment of animals admits, perhaps, of as much variety in the mode in which it is performed, as any circumstance connected with their œconomy; whether we consider their numerous tribes, the different stages through which every animal passes, or the food adapted to the support of each, in their distinct conditions and situations. We are likewise to include in this view, that endless variety, in the means by which this food is procured, according to the class of the animal and the particular stage of its existence. If the food was the same through every period of the life of an animal; if every individual of a tribe lived on the same kind, and procured it by the same mode, our speculations would then admit of a regular arrangement. But when we see that the food adapted to one stage of an animal's life is rejected at another; and that animals of one class are in some respects similar to those of another, having hardly any food peculiar to themselves, the subject becomes so complicated, that it is not surprising if we are at a loss to arrange the various modes by which animals are nourished.

Animal life may not improperly be divided into three states, or stages. The first comprehends the production of the animal and its growth in the fetal state: the second commences when it emerges from that state, by what is called the birth; yet for a certain time must, either immediately or immediately, depend on the parent for support: the third, may be said to take place when the animal is fit and at liberty to act for itself. The first and third stages are perhaps common to all animals; but there are some classes, as fishes, spiders, &c. which seem to have no second stage, but pass directly from the first, to what is the third in other animals. Of those requiring a second stage, the polypus and the viviparous animals.

continue

continue to derive their nourishment immediately from the parent; while the oviparous are for some time supported by a substance originally formed with them, and reserved for that purpose.

There is infinite variety in the means by which nature provides for the support of the young in this second stage of animal life. In many insects it is effected by the female instinctively depositing the egg, or whatever contains the rudiments of the animal, in such a situation that, when hatched, it may be within reach of proper food: others, as the bee and blackbeetle, collect a quantity of peculiar substance, which both serves as a nidus for the egg, and nourishment for the maggot, when the embryo arrives at that state. Most birds, and many of the bee tribe, collect food for their young; when at a more advanced period, the task of feeding them is performed by both male and female, with an exception in the common bee, the young ones of which are not fed by either parent, but by the working bees, who act the part of the nurse. There is likewise a number of animals capable of supplying nourishment proper for their offspring, during this second stage, immediately from their own bodies; which mode of nourishment has hitherto been supposed to be peculiar to that class of animals which Linnæus calls Mammalia; nor has it, I imagine, been even suspected to belong to any other.

I have, however, in my inquiries concerning the various modes in which young animals are nourished, discovered that all of the dove kind are endowed with a similar power. The young pigeon, like the young quadruped, till it is capable of digesting the common food of its kind, is fed with a substance secreted for that purpose by the parent animal: not as in the Mammalia by the female alone; but also by the male, which, perhaps, furnishes this nutriment in a degree still more abundant. It is a common property of birds, that both male and female are equally employed in hatching, and in feeding their young in the second stage; but this particular mode of nourishment, by means of a substance secreted in their own bodies, is peculiar to certain kinds, and is carried on in the crop.

Besides the dove kind, I have some reason to suppose parrots to be endowed with the same faculty, as they have the power of throwing up the contents of the crop, and feeding one another. I have seen the cock
paroquet

paroquet regularly feed the hen, by first filling his own crop, and then supplying her from his beak. Parrots, macaws, cockatoos, &c. when they are very fond of the person who feeds them, may likewise be observed to have the action of throwing up the food, and often do it. The cock pigeon, when he caresses the hen, performs the same kind of action as when he feeds his young; but I do not know, if at this time, he throws up any thing from the crop.

During incubation, the coats of the crop, in the pigeon, are gradually enlarged and thickened, like what happens to the udder of females of the class *Mammalia*, in the term of uterine gestation. On comparing the state of the crop when the bird is not sitting, with its appearance during incubation, the difference is very remarkable. In the first case it is thin and membranous; but by the time the young are about to be hatched, the whole, except what lies on the trachea, becomes thickened, and takes on a glandular appearance, having its internal surface very irregular*. It is likewise evidently more vascular than in its former state, that it may convey a quantity of blood, sufficient for the secretion of this substance, which is to nourish the young brood for some days after they are hatched.

Whatever may be the consistence of this substance, when just secreted, it most probably very soon coagulates into a granulated white curd; for in such a form I have always found it in the crop; and if an old pigeon is killed just as the young ones are hatching, the crop will be found as above described, and in its cavity pieces of white curd mixed with some of the common food of the pigeon, such as barley, beans, &c. If we allow either of the parents to feed the young, its crop, when examined, will be discovered to contain the same curdled substance; which passes from thence into the stomach, where it is to be digested.

The young pigeon is fed for some time with this substance only, and about the third day, some of the common food is found mingled with it; and as the pigeon grows older, the proportion of common food is increased; so that by the time it is seven, eight, or nine days old, the secretion of the curd ceases in the old ones, and of course no more will

* Vide Plate II.

be found in the crop of the young. It is a curious fact, that the parent pigeon has at first a power to throw up this curd without any mixture of common food, although afterwards both are thrown up according to the proportion required for the young ones.

I have called this substance curd, not as being literally so, but as resembling that more than any thing I know : it may, however, have a greater resemblance to curd, than we are perhaps aware of ; for neither this secretion, nor curd, from which the whey has been pressed, seem to contain any sugar, and do not run into the acetous fermentation. The property of coagulating is confined to the substance itself, as it produces no such effect when mixed with milk.

This secretion in the pigeon, like all other animal substances, becomes putrid by standing ; though not so readily as either blood or meat, it resisting putrefaction for a considerable time ; neither will curd, much pressed, become putrid so soon as either blood or meat.

Plate I.

*H. G. G. G.**H. G. G. G.*

P L A T E I.

THE crop, taken from a pigeon when it had no young ones. The crop in the pigeon is probably more in the middle of the neck than in any other bird, being two equal bags, as it were, passing out, laterally, from the œsophagus; while in most other birds it is a little on one side. The œsophagus of those birds who have crops, may be divided into two, a superior and inferior. The superior is that which leads from the mouth to the crop; the inferior, from the crop to the gizzard.

The crop was inverted and distended with spirits. It shows the appearance of its internal surface.

A The inner surface of the superior œsophagus.

BB The inside of the two projecting bags of the crop.

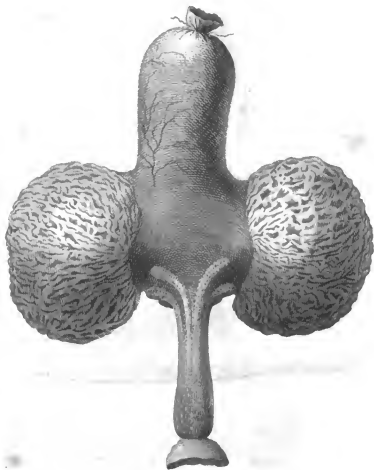
E The inferior œsophagus, leading from the crop to the gizzard.

DDDD Glands situated on the lower part of the crop, and continued into the inferior œsophagus.

E A glandular structure upon the inner surface of this œsophagus, just before it terminates in the gizzard, for the purpose of secreting a substance analogous to the gastric liquor.

C c

PLATE

Plate II.*W. A. del.**W. A. sculp.*

P L A T E II.

THE crop, from a male pigeon, while the female was breeding, to show the change which takes place at that time, on its internal surface, for the purpose of secreting a substance which is to nourish the young.

The crop is prepared in the same way as in Plate I; and the only difference in the appearance is the glandular structure on the inner surface of the two lateral projecting bags, which is not seen at any other time.

ON THE COLOUR OF THE PIGMENTUM OF THE EYE IN DIFFERENT ANIMALS.

IN the eyes of all animals which I have examined, there is a substance approaching to the nature and appearance of a membrane, called the pigmentum, which lines the choroid coat, and is somewhat similar to the rete mucosum which lies under the cuticle in the human body; and there is also some of the same kind of substance diffused through the cellular membrane, which unites the choroid with the sclerotic coat. My intention, at present, is only to communicate the observations I have made on this substance, and its use, confining myself to the consideration of that portion which lines the tunica choroides in the class Mammalia and in birds: in doing this I shall also take notice of the difference of colour occurring in animals of the same species. Although the appearance of this substance in the eyes of some fishes might illustrate the subject, we cannot avail ourselves of it, as we are not sufficiently acquainted with the effects of light on the eyes of that class of animals.

The propagation or continuance of animals in their distinct classes, is an established law of nature; and, in a general way, is preserved with a tolerable degree of uniformity: but in the individuals of each species, varieties are every day produced in colour, shape, size, and disposition. Some of these changes are permanent with respect to the propagation of the animal; becoming so far a part of its nature as to be continued in the offspring.

Animals living in a free and natural state are subject to few deviations from their specific character; but Nature is less uniform in its operations when influenced by culture*. Considerable varieties are produced under such

* From the variations produced by culture, it would appear, that the animal is so susceptible of impression, as to vary Nature's actions; and this is even carried into propagation. Whether

such circumstances; of which the most frequent are changes in the colour. These changes are always, I believe, from the dark to the lighter tints; and the alteration is very gradual in certain species, requiring in the Canary-bird several generations; while in the crow, mouse, &c. it is completed in one. But this change is not always to white, though still approaching nearer to it in the young, than in the parent; being sometimes to dun, at others to spotted, of all the various shades between the two extremes. As this alteration in colour is constantly from dark to lighter, may we not reasonably infer, that in all animals subject to such variation, the darkest of the species should be reckoned nearest to the original; and that where there are black of that kind, the whole have been originally black. Without this supposition, it will be impossible, on the principle I have stated, to account for individuals of any class being black. Every such variety may be considered as arising in the cultivated state of animals; but whether, if left to themselves, they would in time resume their original appearance, I do not know^b.

The colour of the pigmentum of the eye always corresponds, I believe, with that of the hair and skin, especially if the animal be only of one colour; but is principally determined by the hair; and the most general colour is a very dark brown, approaching to black, from whence it had the name, *nigrum pigmentum*^c. The colour differs in different classes of animals, often in the same class, and even in the same species. In the human species it is most commonly dark; in the ferret kind always light: and its difference of colour in the same species is evident from the variety observable in the eyes of different people. There is even a difference of colour in the same eye in many classes of animals; in all of the cat and dog kind, and perhaps in most part of the granivorous. In some it is

Whether this takes place at the very first union of the principles of the two parents, so as to derive its existence from both; or, whether it takes its formation from the mother, after the first formation of the embryo, are, perhaps, not easily determined.

^b In vegetables, I believe, it invariably holds good, that however improved by culture, if neglected, they soon degenerate into their first state.

^c As the colour of this membrane corresponds with the colour of the skin and hair of the person, it is probable that the people, among whom it first got the name, were dark.

partly

partly black, and partly of the appearance of polished silver : and in many classes, the variation from dark is of two colours ; for in the cow, in sheep, deer, horses, and I believe in all animals feeding on grass, there are, in the same eye, certain portions of it white, and others of a fine green colour. The difference in colour of this pigmentum, in the eyes of different animals of the same species, is very remarkable ; in the human species it is of all the different shades between black and almost white ; and the same variety is seen in rabbits, mice, crows, blackbirds, &c. but in these it is of one colour only in the same eye. Every species is, perhaps, subject to such variations ; and some of these deviations are so extraordinary, as with propriety to be denominated monstrous*.

The variation in the colour of the pigmentum in different species of animals, seems to depend on a fixed law of nature ; but the varieties which are met with in the same species are much less constant, being merely different shades, approaching to black or white. But the extraordinary circumstance is, its being sometimes unusually lighter in individuals of the same species, and this difference is sometimes starting up in the offspring without any hereditary principle to account for it.

The human species is a striking example of the colour of the pigmentum corresponding with that of the skin and hair ; and though the skin and hair of one person differs very considerably from the skin and hair of another, yet it is not in so great a degree as in many animals. There are cattle perfectly white, white sheep, white dogs, white cats, and rabbits ; but there are few of the human species that we can say are perfectly white. They rather pass from the black into the brown, red, and even light yellow ; and we find this pigmentum, although only of one colour, varying through all the different corresponding shades. In the African negro, the blackness of whose hair and skin are great distinguishing cha-

* Perhaps the word, monstrous, is too strong, or not exactly just. It certainly may be laid down as one of the principles or laws of Nature, to deviate under certain circumstances. It may also be observed, that it is neither necessary, nor does it follow, that all deviations from the original must be a falling off ; it appears just the contrary, therefore we may suppose that Nature is improving its works ; or, at least, has established the principle of improvement in the body as well as in the mind.

acteristics,

raacteristics, this pigmentum is also very black. In the mulatto, who has not the skin so dark as the African, but the hair nearly as black, this pigmentum is of a shade not quite so deep, yet still does not approach so near to the middle tint as the skin, rather following the colour of the hair. In people of a swarthy complexion, as Indians, Turks, Tartars, Moors, &c. we find the hair always of a jet black, and this substance of a much darker brown than in those that are fair. In those of very dark complexions, and having very black hair, although descended from fair parents, the same thing holds good. There are few species of animals, or even individuals of a species, whose bodies are only of one colour. Crows, and some others, are exceptions; but the greatest number are of two or more, being variously spotted or streaked, either with different colours, or with shades of the same. Many species are constantly lighter in some parts of the body than in others; and, with a few exceptions, animals are generally lighter, as to colour, on the lower, or what may be called the foreparts, than on the upper or backparts. The fair man or woman may strictly be considered as a spotted or variegated animal. In many persons, the hair of the head, eyebrows, eyelashes, beard, and hair on the pubes, all vary in colour. The hair of the three first may be called foetal, and are oftener all of the same, than of a different colour; the two last are to be considered as adult hair, and are commonly alike in colour, which yet frequently varies from that of the fœtus; the last is more liable to change its colour than the other; and the change is generally that of growing darker, especially on the head and the eyelashes*. This difference in the colour of the hair, on different parts of the body, is not so observable in those nations who are dark or swarthy, as in people inhabiting many of the northern climates.

In animals which are variegated, let us observe the colour of this pigmentum, and we shall find it regulated by some general principle, and corresponding with the colour of the eyelashes. The magpie, for instance, is nearly one-third or fourth part white; and the two colours, if blended, would make the compound grey; but the eyelashes being black,

* The hair growing grey, is not in the least to the present purpose.

the pigmentum is black also. We sometimes meet with people whose skin and hair are very white, and yet the iris is dark, which is a sign of a dark pigmentum; but if we examine more carefully, we shall also find that the eyelashes are dark, although the eyelids may be the colour of the common hair.

As the colour of the iris in the human species is probably a presumptive, though not a certain sign of the colour of this pigmentum, we may be led to suppose that in those who have the iris in one eye different from that of the other, this substance will likewise differ: but this I cannot determine, never having examined the eyes of any person with such a peculiarity. It is not an uncommon circumstance in some species of animals; the Angola cat seldom having the colour of the iris the same in both eyes.

In people remarkably fair, whether they are of a race that is naturally so, or what may be called monstrous in respect to colour, as white Æthiopians, still we find this pigmentum following the colour of the skin and hair; being in some of a light brown, and in others almost white, according to the colour of the hair in such people.

All foals are of the same colour; and whatever that may be, as they grow older it generally becomes lighter; therefore the pigmentum in them is almost always of the same colour, and does not seem to change with the hair. This change, however, is only in the hair, and not in the skin; the skin of a white or grey horse being as dark as the skin of a black one: yet there is a cream-coloured breed which has the skin of the same colour, whose foals are also of a cream-colour; and by inspecting the parts not covered with hair, such as the mouth, anus, sheath, &c. these, and the pigmentum of the eyes of such horses, are found of a cream-colour likewise.

In the pigmentum of the rabbit kind, there are all the degrees of dark and light, corresponding with the colour of the hair; yet there seem to be exceptions to this rule in some white rabbits with black eyes, and therefore with black pigmentum; but in all such there is either a circle of black hair surrounding the eye, or the eyelashes, and the skin forming the edge of the lid, is also black. In many white cattle, this is

D d

also

also observable ; and in that breed of dogs, called Danes, some have the hair surrounding one eye black, while the hair surrounding the other is white ; and the iris of the one is often lighter than that of the other. This circumstance, of the iris of one eye being lighter in colour than that of the other, is a common thing in the human species ; and sometimes only one-half of the iris is light, without any difference in the colour of the eyelash, or eyebrow. Whether this difference in the colour of the iris of the two eyes, in the same animal, is owing to the pigmentum being different in colour, I do not know ; although I rather suspect it is something similar to the white iris in horses, which makes them what is called wall-eyed.

The variation of colour appears most remarkable when a white starts up, either where the whole species is black, as in the crow or blackbird ; or where only a certain part of the species is black, (but permanently so) as a white child born of black parents ; and a perfectly white child whose hair is white, and who has the pigmentum also white, though born of parents who are fair, should as much be considered as a play of Nature as the others. All these *lusus naturæ* ; such as the white negro, the pure white child of fair parents, the white crow, the white blackbird, white mice, &c. have likewise a white pigmentum corresponding with the colour of the hair, feathers, and skin.

Besides the circumstance of animals of the same species differing from one another in colour, there are some distinct species which are, as far as we know, always of a light colour, and in them too this pigmentum is white ; the animal I allude to is the ferret.

When the pigmentum is of more than one colour in the same eye, the lighter portion is always placed at the bottom of the eye, in the shape of a halfmoon, with the circular arch upwards ; the straight line, or diameter, passing almost horizontally just across the lower edge of the optic nerve, so that the end of the nerve is within this lighter coloured part, which makes a kind of semicircular sweep above the nerve. This shape is peculiar to the cat, lion, dog, and most of the carnivorous tribe ; in the herbivorous, the upper edge being irregular ; however, in the seal, the light part of this pigmentum is equally disposed all round the optic nerve,

nerve, and is, on the whole, broader than it is commonly found in quadrupeds. How far this increased surface is an approach towards the fish kind, in which it is wholly of this metallic white, I will not pretend to say; but it is probable that, as the animal is to see under water as well as in the air, its being circular, may be for its better corresponding with the form of the eyelids, which open equally all round; this seems also to correspond with what is observable in fishes, as they are without eyelids.

The colour of the pigmentum, whether white, or green, or both, has always a bright surface, appearing like polished metal; which appearance, animal substance is very capable of taking on, as we see in hair, feathers, silk, &c.

After having taken notice of the various colours of this pigmentum in different animals, both where permanent, and where it appears to be a play of Nature, let us next examine what effect it has upon vision, in both cases; whether these effects are similar, or if one case illustrates the other.

It may be asserted as an undoubted fact, that the light which falls on the retina, covering a white pigmentum, has more effect than when it falls on the retina which covers a dark one: which is known by comparing the vision of those of the same species who have the pigmentum wholly dark, with those who have it perfectly white; and something may be learned, by a similar comparison of animals who have it only in part white, with those which have it entirely dark, although they are of different species, as it is reasonable, from analogy, to suppose that some such effect is produced in the eye which is possessed of both.

I shall first consider the effect produced when the white or light colour makes only part of the pigmentum. This will lead me to observe, that all animals having the pigmentum diversified, though they are capable of bearing as much light as others, and can see as perfectly when light is in an equal degree; can likewise see very distinctly when the light is much less than serves the purposes of animals having it wholly dark. May we not, therefore, ascribe this advantage to the pigmentum being partly white? One might be almost tempted to suppose, that such animals have a power

of presenting the different parts of the eye to the light, according to the quantity of light required; or of moving the chrystalline humour higher or lower: but we are at present unacquainted with any power in the eye by which these actions can be performed.

We may observe that when a cat or dog looks at us in the twilight, the whole pupil is enlarged and illuminated; but in a full light that there is no such appearance. It is plain there must be a reflexion of light from the bottom of the eye, to produce the above effect; especially as the light reflected is always of the colour of the pigmentum in such animals; in the cow it is a light green.

I shall secondly, consider those which have the whole pigmentum of a white colour, whether it is accidental or natural, and which see much better in the dark, or with less light than those in which it is of a dark colour: of the first of these I shall take my instance from the human species; of the second, the ferret will serve as an example.

Those of the human species, who have the pigmentum of a light colour, see much better with a less degree of light than those who have it dark; and this in proportion to their fairness: for when the hair is quite white, they cannot see at all in open day, without knitting their eyebrows, and keeping the eyelids almost shut. In many of these instances there is an universal glare of light from the pupil, tinged with a shade of red; this colour, most probably, arises from the blood in the vessels of the choroid coat; I have observed that the pigmentum is thinnest when it is light; so that some of the light, which is reflected from the point of vision, would seem to be thrown all over the inner surface of the eye; which being white, or rather a reddish white, the light appears to be again reflected from side to side*. This seemed to be the case in a boy at Shepperton, when about three years of age, and of whom I have a portrait, to show that appearance. He is now about thirteen years of age: the common light of the day is still too much for him; the twi-

* How far this is really the case, I do not absolutely say. For whatever light comes through the pupil, must be reflected from the point of vision; but I conceived I saw the light passing through the substance of the iris.

light

light is less offensive. When in a room, he turns his eyes from the window; and when made to expose his face to the light, or when out in the open air, he knits his eyebrows, half shuts his eyelids, and bends his head forwards, or a little down: yet the light appears less obnoxious to him now than formerly, probably from habit. Such persons appear to be nearer sighted than people in common; but I apprehend that arises from the position into which the eyelids and brows are thrown, which not only in a great degree excludes the light, making the object faint in proportion to the contraction of the pupil and shade made by the eyelids and eyebrows; but at the same time fits the eye to see near objects: for if we nearly close our eyelids, and knit our eyebrows, we can see a small object much nearer than if we did not perform such actions; and it will make above a foot difference in the focal distance of the eye. In many rabbits who have white eyelashes, and in white mice, the pigmentum is entirely white. The same thing is to be observed in a certain distinct species of animals, the ferret, which we have adduced as an example of the pigmentum being naturally white: these animals being intended to see in the dark, and their mode of life not exposing them to the light, they are liable, in a much greater degree, to be affected by strong light.

If it is allowed as probable that, in animals having the pigmentum diversified, the object to be viewed is thrown upon the lighter coloured portion; how does it happen that such are able to bear the light better than those who have the pigmentum altogether of a light colour? Perhaps it is not the illuminated object itself that is offensive to the retina; but that diffusion of light in the one kind of eye, which does not happen in the other.

Having stated the facts, and the general effect arising from the diversified pigmentum, let us next consider the manner in which the effect is produced;—That such animals see better with little light, than those which have the pigmentum wholly black.

Let us here suppose the retina to be the organ of sight; and that by the rays which fall upon it being properly refracted, it gives or conveys to the mind an idea of a distinct object, corresponding with the sensation of touch. This is the most common and simple manner in which vision

is

is performed, and is that mode which takes place where the pigmentum is black, or nearly so; and where the greatest quantity of external light is required.

The retina, although somewhat opaque, is yet so transparent as to allow a considerable quantity of light to pass through it. For if this was not the case, there could not be those differences in the appearance of the eye which I have been describing. The rays which pass through, we may suppose, do or do not give sensation in their passage; and we may also suppose, that only those which strike against the retina are the cause of sensation: but this is not the present inquiry; the rays which pass through the retina, are what I am alone to consider; which falling upon the pigmentum, are there disposed of according to the reflecting powers of that substance. If the pigmentum is black, the rays will then be absorbed and entirely lost; therefore in such eyes, vision can receive no assistance from it; and consequently a considerable quantity of light is required to produce distinct vision: but in those who have some part of this pigmentum white, we find that the rays of light which pass through the retina, are reflected back again; and in this case it is not unnatural to suppose that the reflected rays, in their passage back, will strike against the retina and increase the power of vision. It is evident that a considerable portion passes forwards through the retina, which, I suspect, is partly lost on the inner surface of the lateral and forepart of the eye, where the pigmentum is black, while the remainder passes through the pupil, and is again thrown on the object looked at. The next thing to be considered is, whether the shape of the eye is such, as will throw the rays, which passed through the retina, back upon that membrane, in the same or nearly in the same place as that through which they originally came. The eye being a sphere, or approaching to that figure, makes it probable. But whether the curve is such as will reflect the rays exactly in the same direction, is not so easily determined. If the curve be a true one, then the rays that are not obstructed in their return by the retina, must pass forwards through the pupil; and being refracted in their passage through the chrySTALLINE humour, will be sent out of the eye in the same lines in which they entered, and be thrown on the very object
from

from whence they came. This seems to be in a great measure the case, by the considerable degree of illumination from the cat's eyes. If the rays, reflected from the light part of the pigmentum, should not, in their return, strike exactly on the same points in the retina, through which they first passed; yet if they are thrown nearly on the same place it will be sufficient; for we know that our sensations are not capable of conveying to the mind mathematical exactness. And the same circumstance will be a sufficient answer, should it be objected that the time lost in the passing and repassing of the rays may prevent distinct vision; for it is known, that if an illumined body is made to move quickly in a circle, it will appear to the eye a circle of fire.

THE USE OF THE OBLIQUE MUSCLES.

MUSCLES are the active parts in an animal body, producing different effects, according to the circumstances in which they are placed; and most parts requiring a variety of motions, it became necessary to have a variety of muscles suited to these motions.

The function of a muscle depends on the contraction of its fibres; and the most general effect produced by this contraction, is to move some one part of the body upon another: but we may observe, that when motion, in a part, is performed by one set of muscles, there are other muscles employed in regulating that motion: as happens in most joints. And in a whole part, destined to a variety of motion, and composed of smaller parts, intended likewise to have their distinct motions, we find muscles appropriated for the purpose of keeping some of those parts fixed in a particular position, while the whole part is to be moved by other muscles, according to the nature of the action to be performed. This will, perhaps, be best illustrated by attending to what takes place in the eye, considering it as part of the head.

The eye being an organ of sense, which is to receive impressions from without, it was necessary it should be able to give its motions that kind of direction from one body to another, as would permit its being impressed
by

by the various surrounding objects ; and it was also necessary, that there should be a power capable of keeping the eye fixed, when our body or head was in motion.

For the better understanding this action of pointing the eye towards objects under the various circumstances of vision, it will be necessary to mention, that the eye is furnished with muscles, some of which in the quadruped, bird, amphibia, and fishes, are called straight, from their being placed in the direction of, or parallel to, the axis of the eye : and two, I believe, have always been named oblique. Of the straight, some animals have more than others. There are four straight muscles which are common to most animals ; and those which have more, have the additional muscles inserted immediately in the eyeball, on its posterior surface, and surrounding the optic nerve. The four straight muscles, which are common to all quadrupeds, pass further forwards, and are rather inserted towards the anterior surface of the eye. For vision, at large, it was not only necessary that the eye should be capable of moving from object to object, but also necessary that there should be a power to keep it fixed on any one object the mind might be attentive to ; therefore the muscles are formed so as not only to be able to move the eye from object to object, but likewise to keep its point of vision fixed upon any particular one, while the eye is moving progressively with the head or body. This is the use of these muscles, when the parts from whence they arise are kept fixed respecting the objects the eye is pointed to ; but it is often necessary while the eye is fixed upon a particular object, that the eyeball, and the head in which it is fixed, should shift their situation respecting that object ; and this would alter the direction of the eye, if the muscles had not the power of taking up an action that produces a contrary effect, that is, keeping the point of insertion of the muscles as the fixed point, by causing their fibres to contract according as the origins of the muscles vary their position respecting the object. From all which we find these three modes of action produced ; first, the eye moving from one fixed object to another ; then the eye moving along with an object in motion ; and last, the eye keeping its axis to an object, although the whole eye, and the head, of which it makes a part, are in motion. From either of these motions

motions taking place singly, or being combined, the eye is always kept towards its object. In the two first modes of action, the origins of the muscles are fixed points respecting the object; and in the last, the object becomes as it were the centre of motion, or fixed point, commanding the direction of the actions of the eye, as the north commands the direction of the needle, let the box in which it is placed be moved in what direction it may. These two first modes of action are performed by the straight muscles; for the head being a fixed point, they are capable of moving the eye up and down, from right to left, with all the intermediate motions, which taken together constitute a circular movement; or when the eye is to become the fixed point, then the head itself performs the circular movement. Thence appears the necessity why the object, the axis of the eye, and the point of sensation, should all three be in the same straight line. But this does not take place in all movements of that whole of which the eye makes a part; for besides those which we have already taken notice of, the head is capable of a motion from shoulder to shoulder, the axis of which is through the axis of the two eyes, from the fore to the backpart. It should be here observed, that for distinct vision, the object must be fixed respecting the pupil of the eye, and not in the least allowed to move over its surface*. To prevent any progressive motion of the object over the retina of the eye, either from the motion of the object itself, or of the head in some of the motions of that part, the straight muscles are provided as has been explained; but the effects which would arise from some other motion of the head, as from

* Optical writers seem to have been entirely ignorant of this; for they not only suppose distinct vision compatible with the object having a motion over the different parts of the retina, but even explain the effects which would be produced by it on the mind of the observer. Keill makes the following observation:

"Since optics teach us, that every body, which is visible, has by means of the rays which proceed from that object, its image painted on the bottom of the eye, or retina; it follows, that those objects will seem to be moved, whose images are moved on the retina, that is, which pass over successively the different parts of the retina, whilst the eye is supposed to be at rest: but those objects will be looked upon as being at rest whose images always occupy the same part of the retina, that is, when the motion of those images are not perceived in the bottom of the eye." Keill's Introduction to Natural Philosophy, page 79.

E e

Shoulder

shoulder to shoulder, cannot be corrected by the action of the straight muscles, therefore the oblique muscles are provided. Thus when we look at an object, and at the same time move our heads to either shoulder, it is moving in the arch of a circle whose centre is the neck; and of course the eyes would have the same quantity of motion on this axis, if the oblique muscles did not fix them upon the object. When the head is moved towards the right-shoulder, the superior oblique muscle of the right-side acts and keeps the right-eye fixed on the object; and a similar effect is produced upon the left-eye by the action of its inferior oblique muscle; when the head moves in a contrary direction, the other oblique muscles produce the same effect. This motion of the head may, however, be to a greater extent than can be counteracted by the action of the oblique muscles. Thus, for instance, while the head is on the left-shoulder, the eyes may be fixed upon an object, and continue looking at it while the head is moved to the right-shoulder, which sweep of the head produces a greater effect upon the eyeballs than can be counteracted by the action of the oblique muscles; and in this case we find that the oblique muscles let go the eye, so that it immediately returns into its natural situation in the orbit. Whether this is performed by the natural elasticity of the parts; or whether the antagonist oblique muscles take up the action and reinstate the eye, I do not know. If the head still continues its motion in the same direction, then the same oblique muscles begin to act anew, and go on acting, so as to keep the eyes fixed on the object: as this motion of the head seldom takes place uncombined with its other motions, some of the straight and oblique muscles will be employed at the same time, according as the motions are compounded.

A DESCRIPTION

A DESCRIPTION OF THE NERVES WHICH SUPPLY THE ORGAN OF SMELLING.

THE nerves being in themselves perhaps the most difficult parts of an animal body to dissect, becomes a reason why we are still unacquainted with many of their minuter ramifications : yet if a knowledge of these, together with that of their origin, union and reunion, is at all connected with their physiology, the more accurately they are investigated, the more perfectly will the functions of the nerves be understood. I have no doubt, if their physiology was sufficiently known, but we should find the distribution and complication of nerves so immediately connected with their particular uses, as readily to explain many of those peculiarities for which it is now so difficult to account. What naturally leads to this opinion is, the origins and number of nerves being constantly the same ; and particular nerves being invariably destined for particular parts. The fourth and sixth pair of nerves are remarkable instances of this ; and we may reasonably conclude, that every part has its particular branch allotted to it ; and that however complicated the distribution may be, the complication is always regular. There are some nerves which have a peculiarity in their course, as the recurrent and chorda tympani ; and others which are appropriated to particular sensations, as those which go to four of the organs of sense, seeing, hearing, smelling, and tasting ; and some parts of the body having peculiar sensations, (as the stomach and penis) we may, without impropriety, include the fifth, or sense of feeling. This general uniformity, in course, connection and distribution, will lead us to suppose that there may be some other purpose to be answered more than mere mechanical convenience. For many variations have been described in the dissections of nerves, which I believe to have arisen from the blunders of the anatomist, rather than from any irregularity

E c 2

in

their number, mode of ramifying, course, distribution, or connection^a with each other. We observe no such uniformity in vessels carrying fluids; but find particular purposes answered by varying their origin and distribution: the pulmonary artery answers a very different purpose in the circulation of the blood, from that of the aorta; yet both arise from the same source, the heart. The course of the arteries is such as will convey the blood most conveniently, and therefore not so necessary it should be uniform; it not being very material to a part by what channel the blood is conveyed; though, in particular instances, certain purposes may be answered by a peculiarity in origin and distribution, as happens in the testicle of quadrupeds. This observation respecting arteries is likewise applicable to veins, and still more to the absorbent vessels, in which last, regularity is even less essential than in the veins. Whoever, therefore, discovers a new artery, vein, or lymphatic, adds little to the stock of physiological knowledge; but he who discovers a new nerve, or furnishes a more accurate description of the distribution of those already known, affords us information in those points which are most likely to lead to an accurate knowledge of the nervous system: for if we consider how various are the origins of the nerves, although all arising from the brain, and how different the circumstances attending them, we must suppose a variety of uses to arise out of this peculiar structure. Indeed if we reflect on the actions arising immediately from the will, and affections of the mind, we must see that the origin, connection, and distribution of the nerves, must be exact, as there are parts whose actions immediately depend upon such circumstances. The brain may be said to have an intelligence with the body; but no such intercourse subsists between the different parts of the body and the heart.

^a Here it is to be understood I do not mean lateral connection; such as two branches uniting into one chord and then dividing; or a branch going to a part, either single or double, for still it is the same nerve; or whether a branch unites with another a little sooner or a little later, for still it is the same branch. Such effects may arise more from a variety in the shape of the bodies they belong to, than any variety in the nerves themselves.

In the summer of 1754, I employed myself principally in dissecting the nerves passing out of the skull; in doing which I was, of course, led to trace many of their connections with those from the medulla spinalis; and was assisted by Dr. Smith, then pursuing his studies in London^a. The better to trace these nerves through the foramina of the skull, I steeped the head in a weakned acid of sea-salt till the bones were rendered soft, and that the parts might be as firm as possible, and at the same time free from any tendency to putrefaction; especially as it was summer, the acid was not diluted with water, but with spirit. When the bones were rendered soft, I pursued my intention, and in the course of the dissection discovered the first pair of nerves; and having made a preparation of the parts in which they were found, I immediately had drawings made from them, with a view to have presented the account to the Royal Society, but other pursuits prevented it^b. Engravings were afterwards made from these drawings; and the preparation was repeatedly shown by Dr. Hunter, in his courses of anatomy, who, at the same time, pointed out that alteration in the mode of reasoning upon those nerves, which would naturally arise from this discovery. In this dissection I found several nerves, principally from the fifth pair, going to and lost upon the membrane of the nose; but suppose those have nothing to do with the sense of smelling; for it is more than probable, that what may be called organs of sense, have particular nerves, whose mode of action is different from that of nerves producing common sensation; and also

^a Dr. Smith was afterwards teacher in chymistry and anatomy, in the university of Oxford; is now Savilian professor of geometry, and lecturer in physiology. This account of the first pair of nerves, as also of the branches of the fifth, is taken from the original description written by him, and taken from my dissection when I was tracing them.

^b Dr. Scarpa, professor of anatomy at Pavia, while in London, in 1782, acquainted me that he had dissected the ramifications of the olfactory nerves; and that on his return to Italy he meant to publish an account of them. At this time I showed him my drawings and engravings. I have lately been informed that he has published his account, but have not met with it: I have, however, seen one of his engravings, which was executed in London, and is very elegant. It only shows those on the septum narium, whose minuteness is rather carried further than the power of dissection, and the ramifications are more regular than we find them in Nature.

different

different from one another; and that the nerves on which the peculiar functions of each of the organs of sense depend, are not supplied from different parts of the brain. The organ of sight has its peculiar nerve; so has that of hearing; and probably that of smelling likewise; and, on the same principle, we may suppose the organ of taste to have a peculiar nerve. Although these organs of sense may likewise have nerves from different parts of the brain; yet it is most probable such nerves are only for the common sensations of the part, and other purposes answered by nerves. Thus we find nerves from different origins going to the parts composing the organ of sight, which are not at all concerned in the immediate act of vision; it is also probable, although not so demonstrable, that the parts composing the ear have nerves belonging to them simply as a part of the body, and not as the organ of a particular sense: and if we carry this analogy to the nose, we shall find a nerve, which we may call the peculiar nerve of that sense; and the other nerves of this part, derived from other origins, which only convey common sensation, we may suppose are only intended for the common actions of the part. This mode of reasoning is equally applicable to the organ of taste; and if the opinion of peculiar nerves going to particular organs of sense, be well founded, then the reason is evident why the nose, as a part of our body, should have nerves in common with other parts, besides these peculiar nerves; and as the membrane of the nose is of considerable extent, and has a great deal of common sensation, we may suppose the nerves sent to this part, for that purpose, will not be few in number. It is upon this principle the fifth pair of nerves may be supposed to supply the eye and nose in common with other parts; and, upon the same principle, it is more than probable, that every nerve so affected as to communicate sensation, in whatever part of the nerve the impression is made, always gives the same sensation as if affected at the common seat of the sensation of that particular nerve*.

The

* I knew a gentleman who had the nerves which go to the glans penis completely destroyed by mortification, almost as high as the union of the penis with the pubes; and at the edge of the old skin, at the root of the penis, where the nerves terminated, was the peculiar sensation of

of

The first pair of nerves arriving at the part of its destination as soon as it escapes from the skull, and immediately ramifying, has rendered its distribution more obscure than that of the others, whose course to the part to which they are allotted is visible and to be traced. As the body of the nerve, while within the skull, is pulpy and composed of the brain itself, it easily breaks off at the very division and exit of the small branches; it therefore becomes impossible to trace them, as we usually do other nerves; and they have by most physiologists been considered as never forming chords, but going on in their pulpy form to be distributed on the membrane of the nose, in a mode somewhat similar to that of the optic nerve; and to what is commonly supposed to take place with respect to the *portio mollis* of the seventh pair. Winslow has suggested an idea, that the first pair forms chords; but it is only as an assertion; and not having described them, that alone was not sufficient to alter the former mode of reasoning.

Haller, who is to be considered as the latest anatomist and physiologist, who has published on the subject, on whom we can depend, says, "That the first pair of nerves makes its way into the nose, covered by the pia mater only, very little altered from what it was when within the cavity of the skull." This shows that Haller retained the old idea concerning these nerves: but we shall find that they become firm chords immediately upon piercing the dura mater and cribriform plate of the ethmoid bone.

The first pair, while within the skull, differs in some respects from all other nerves; firstly, it seems to be made up of a cortical and medullary substance, while the others appear to consist of medullary alone; and

of the glans penis; and the sensation of the glans itself was now only common sensation; therefore the glans has, probably, different nerves, and those for common sensation may come through the body of the penis to the glans.

A serjeant of marines who had lost the glans, and the greater part of the body of the penis, upon being asked, if he ever felt those sensations which are peculiar to the glans, declared, that upon rubbing the end of the stump, it gave him exactly the sensation which friction upon the glans produced, and was followed by an emission of the semen.

* *Elementa Physiologiae*, vol. 5. page 151.

secondly,

secondly, it is different, in that it does not seem to be composed of fasciculi, and has but one covering from the pia mater investing the whole nerve; whereas other nerves appear to have a covering round each fasciculus; and this is probably the reason why the first pair is weaker while within the skull, than the others. Its form is somewhat triangular, having three edges, from its lying in a groove, made by two convolutions of the brain. Its course is forwards, a little upwards and inwards, and where it lies upon the cribriform plate of the ethmoid bone, becomes somewhat larger and divides into a great many branches, like so many roots, answering to the number of holes in that plate, except one for a branch of the fifth pair; but these divisions we cannot see, they being covered by the body of the nerve, which cannot be raised without breaking off the small branches at their origins. As the branches of the nerve pass through this bone, they seem to take processes from the dura mater along with them; they then become firm chords, similar to other nerves. These branches, after they have got through the bone, form themselves into two planes or divisions, one passing on the septum, the other on the turbinated bones. These of the septum narium, in their passage to the nose, are first continued a little way down, in bony canals of the perpendicular lamella of the ethmoid bone; which holes become small grooves in that bone; and those on the opposite side being more numerous and smaller, pass down in small holes that are on the inside plate of the ethmoid bone, which holes are likewise continued into grooves, for a little way, upon that plate. When these branches get upon the membrane of the nose, they subdivide into a great many smaller ones, which are somewhat flattened, and are only to be seen on that side of the membrane that adheres to the bones, not being visible at all on the other; so that the dissection of these nerves is no more than separating the membrane and bone from each other. They can hardly be dissected all round; and the further they are traced upon the membrane the fainter they become, and growing smaller, they sink deeper and deeper into the membrane to get on its outer surface, where we must suppose they terminate. Those upon the septum pass
down

down a little radiated, and the branches, especially at the upper part, or at their first setting out, join one another. Those on the side next the antrum, when they have reached the membrane of the nose, in their course to the superior turbinated bone, form a very considerable network or plexus; and when they reach that bone, do not all go round its convex curved pendulous edge to the concave side; but some passing through the substance of that bone, get immediately upon it; which is the reason why we find so many holes in that bone. It is difficult to trace them further; but it is reasonable to suppose that they go through the inferior turbinated bone in the same manner, since we find similar holes there.

A DESCRIPTION OF SOME BRANCHES OF THE FIFTH PAIR OF NERVES.

IN tracing the course of the olfactory nerves, I also discovered several branches of the fifth pair, not commonly known, particularly two that were supposed to go to the membrane of the nose for the sense of smelling; but which only pass through that organ to their place of destination. The first is a small nerve from the first branch of the fifth pair; or, according to Winslow, the *nervus ophthalmicus Willisii*; which small nerve is called by Winslow, the *nasal*. This branch, after having passed out of the skull into the orbit, re-enters the cranium through the foramen orbitarium anterius, and gets on the cribriform plate of the ethmoid bone; from thence it passes down through one of the anterior holes of the cribriform plate, and after having continued its course in a groove on the nasal process of the frontal bone, it runs forward and downward in a similar groove on the inside of the *os nasi*; from thence getting on the outside of the cavity of the nose, it runs along the cartilaginous part of the ala, and near the extremity of the nose mounts up upon the tip of the ala, and then dipping down between the two alæ, is lost on the anterior extremity of the cartilaginous septum. In its course it sends several small filaments into the alæ.

F f

The

The second, is a branch of the superior maxillary nerve; for that nerve having passed through the foramen rotundum, divides and sends off several branches, one of which passes backwards and inwards, through the foramen commune, between the orbital process of the palate, and the root of the ala of the sphenoid bone, a branch of which gets into a fissure, and seems to separate the root of the ala from the body of the sphenoid bone, where that bone makes the roof of the nose. This branch then passes along the under surface of the body of the sphenoid bone, in its way to the septum narium, and getting upon that part, passes along between its membranes and the bone: its course is downwards, and forwards towards the foramen incisivum, through which it passes and is lost in the gum behind the first dentes incisores, and on the membrane of the roof of the mouth at that part.

There is another branch of the superior maxillary nerve, which comes off from a large branch that is going down to the mouth uvula, &c. and this branch, with its division into two, has been described by professor Meckel of Berlin; but after tracing one of these into the portio dura, he pursued the search no further. This branch of the superior maxillary nerve passes back through the foramen pterigoideum, accompanies the carotid artery as it passes across the posterior edge of the foramen, and there divides into two branches; one of which passes down along with the carotid artery, through the basis of the skull, and proceeding in a contrary direction to the course of the artery, in contact with that branch of the cervical ganglion that passes up with the carotid artery to join the sixth pair; then joins the first cervical ganglion. The other branch decussates that artery on its upper surface, and getting upon the anterior side of the petrous portion of the temporal bone, then enters a small hole near the bottom of that large one which affords a passage to the seventh pair of nerves, joining the portio dura, just where that nerve makes its first turn, passes along with it through what is called the aqueduct. This nerve, composed of portio dura, and the branch of the fifth pair, sends off, in the adult, the chorda tympani before its exit from the skull; and in the fœtus, immediately after. The termination of the
branch

branch, called chorda tympani, I shall not describe; I am almost certain it is not a branch of the seventh pair of nerves, but the last-described branch from the fifth pair; for I think I have been able to separate this branch from the portio dura, and have found it lead to the chorda tympani; perhaps, is continued into it; but this is a point very difficult to determine, as the portio dura is a very compact nerve, and not so fasciculated as some others are; however this may be, it is very reasonable to suppose that the chorda tympani is a branch of the fifth pair, as it goes to join another branch arising from the same trunk.



P L A T E I.

THE olfactory, or first pair of nerves, as they are seen upon the membrane of the septum narium.

The bony septum is removed to expose the nerves of the right nostril, as they pass at first between the membrane and bone.

A The os frontis.

B The frontal sinus.

C The cartilaginous part of the septum narium.

**** The cut edge, from which the septum has been separated all round.

D The surface of the common skin, where it is lost in the membrane of the nose.

E The upper lip.

F Part of the alveolar process of the maxillary bone next the symphysis.

G The roof of the mouth.

H The bony palate.

I The uvula, and palatum molle.

K The upper part of the fauces.

L The opening of the Eustachian tube.

M The cuneiform process of the os occipitis.

N The inside of the cuneiform process, near the foramen magnum occipitale.

O The posterior clinoid process.

P The sphenoid sinus, with its septum.

Q The sella Turcica.

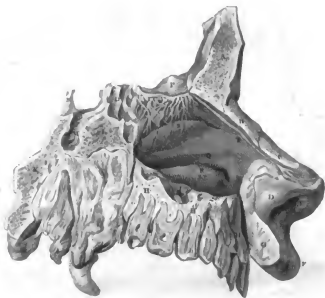
R The crista galli.

SS The membrane of the right nostril that lined the septum; the septum being removed.

T A branch of the fifth pair of nerves, that comes through the foramen commune, or sphenopalatinum.

UUU The first pair of nerves, having passed through the cribriform plate of the ethmoid bone, ramifying on the membrane of the septum.

PLATE



J. V. Ross sculp

H. Sharp sculp

P L A T E II.

THE olfactory, or first pair of nerves, as they are seen upon the membrane of the nose, which covers the turbinated bones; the exterior parts of the face being removed.

This engraving was taken from the same head as plate I.

- A The os frontis.
- B The os nasi.
- C The cartilaginous and membranous part of the nose.
- D The ala nasi, with the skin left on.
- E The septum narium.
- F The upper lip.
- HHH The alveolar process of the superior maxillary bone.
- I Part of the antrum.
- K The os occipitis.
- L The body of the sphenoid bone.
- M The groove made by the carotid artery.
- N The posterior clinoid process.
- O The sphenoid sinus.
- P The crista galli.
- Q The membrane of the nose.
- R The membrane, a little more convex, where the inferior turbinated bone is situated.
- S The same where the superior turbinated bone is situated.
- T The branch of the fifth pair of nerves that was supposed to be lost on the membrane of the nose.
- UUU The trunk of the first pair of nerves which is afterwards lost upon that part of Snieder's membrane that covers the turbinated bones.

T H E E N D.

11.1.0

Z

19.1.60

PH-19045

005659174

